

THE LIFE OF
THOMAS ELLWOOD

“By faith the elders obtained a good report.” Heb. 11:2.

ORIGINALLY ENTITLED:
THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF
THOMAS ELLWOOD
WRITTEN BY HIMSELF

* * *

*TAKEN FROM THE FRIEND'S LIBRARY 1837-1850
BY WILLIAM EVANS AND THOMAS EVANS*

*MODERNIZED SPELLING AND FORMATTING BY
JASON R. HENDERSON 2018*

PREFACE

“Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost,” was the direction of our Saviour to his disciples, after he had fed the multitude. This may properly be applied to collecting and preserving the accounts of the lives of good men, who in their day have been eminently useful in those stations of life wherein God, by his good providence, has placed them. And this is more especially to be done, when they leave behind them, in writing, an account of their lives, and of the signal mercies of God to them therein. From such accounts may best be gathered, their particular state, and their exercise and growth in the work of restoration out of the fall and degeneracy; and, in the reading thereof, we may be not only incited to bless the name of the Lord, on their behalf, but also gain some instruction from the path so fairly laid out, and their ground of hope; that by being faithful, we may likewise attain the same good experience.

There is not with me any doubt but something of this kind may be the lot of many, into whose hands this treatise may happen to come; for they will herein meet with a variety of exercises, and the providences of God therein, related with strength and plainness of speech. Our deceased friend Thomas Ellwood, was a man whom God had endued with singular abilities, both as a man, and as a Christian; which is evident, from his many useful labours and services and the many books which he wrote in the defence of Truth, and the friends thereof. For this service, he was in a particular manner qualified by spiritual wisdom and Christian obedience; to which, in him, was added great strength and depth of judgment, wherein he could discern the spirits of others, and was very much the master of his own, as appeared to such who knew him, not only by the soundness of his reasoning and the seasonableness of his words; but also by his great and exemplary modesty, in that he was not hasty to propose, nor rudely tenacious to insist on what he had proposed, if anything, though not well expressed, yet well intended, was offered by anyone much weaker, no, though by but a babe in Christ.

His countenance was manly and cheerful; his deportment grave, yet affable and courteous, even to the lowest person; his conduct innocent, pleasant and instructive, yet severe against anything that was beyond the liberty of Truth. These, with his other qualifications of body and mind, rendered him very acceptable and useful, as a friend and as a neighbour, and as a member and elder in the church of Christ; and the more, for that his time was chiefly employed in being serviceable in one or other of these capacities.

I might here particularly mention the labours of our deceased friend, according to their respective times, and the nature of their several subjects; but much of this being already done in the ensuing pages, I choose to omit it; by which, possibly the reader may be incited to the perusal of them; and shall only say concerning them, that his method and style denote him to have been a scholar; and yet not farther so, than the simplicity and purity of the truth, whereof he made profession, would permit him.

As it was my lot to be well acquainted with him, though only in the latter years of his life, and I know that he did neither use nor encourage the bestowing of elaborate praise upon persons deceased; so I shall add no further concerning him, than to say with the apostle concerning the faithful, “That he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and by it being dead, he yet speaks.”

Joseph Wyeth.

London, the 12th of the Second month, 1714.

THE LIFE OF THOMAS ELLWOOD

Although my station not being so eminent either in the church of Christ, or in the world, as others who have moved in higher orbs, may not afford such considerable remarks as theirs; yet, inasmuch as in the course of my travels through this vale of tears, I have passed through various, and some uncommon exercises, which the Lord has been graciously pleased to support me under, and conduct me through; I hold it a matter excusable at least, if not commendable, to give the world some little account of my life. In recounting the many deliverances and preservations, which the Lord has vouchsafed to work for me, both I, by a grateful acknowledgment thereof, and return of thanksgivings unto him therefor, may in some measure set forth his abundant goodness to me; and others, whose lot it may be to tread the same path, and fall into the same or like exercises, may be encouraged to persevere in the way of holiness, and with full assurance of mind, to trust in the Lord, whatsoever trial may befall them.

To begin, therefore, with my own beginning: I was born in the year of our Lord 1639, about the beginning of the eighth month, so far as I have been able to inform myself; for the parish register, which relates to the time, not of birth, but of baptism, as they call it, is not to be relied on.

The place of my birth was a little country town called Crowell, situate in the upper side of Oxfordshire, three miles eastward from Thame, the nearest market-town. My father's name was Walter Ellwood; and my mother's maiden name was Elizabeth Potman; both well descended, but of declining families. What my father possessed, which was a sizeable estate in lands, and more as I have heard in money, he received, as he had done his name Walter, from his grandfather Walter Gray, whose daughter and only child was his mother.

In my very infancy, when I was but about two years old, I was carried to London. For the civil war between king and parliament breaking then forth, my father, who favoured the parliament side, though he took not arms, not holding himself safe at his country habitation, which lay too near some garrisons of the king's, betook himself to London, that city then holding for the parliament.

There was I bred up, though not without much difficulty, the city air not agreeing with my tender constitution, and there continued until Oxford was surrendered, and the war in appearance ended.

In this time, my parents contracted an acquaintance and intimate friendship with the lady Springett, then the widow of Sir William Springett, who died in the parliament service, and afterwards the wife of Isaac Penington, eldest son of Alderman Penington of London. This friendship devolving from the parents to the children, I became an early and particular playfellow to her daughter Gulielma; being admitted, as such, to ride with her in her little coach, drawn by her footman about Lincoln's-Inn-Fields.

I mention this in this place, because the continuation of that acquaintance and friendship, having been an occasional means of my being afterwards brought to the knowledge of the blessed Truth, I shall have frequent cause, in the following discourse, to make honourable mention of that family, to which I am under many and great obligations.

Soon after the surrender of Oxford, my father returned to his estate at Crowell; which by that time he might have need enough to look after, having spent, I suppose, the greatest part of the monies which had been left him by his grandfather, in maintaining himself and his family at a high rate in London. My elder brother—for I had one brother and two sisters all elder than myself—while we lived in London, was boarded at a private school, in the house of one Francis Atkinson, at a place called Hadley, near Barnet in Hertfordshire, where he made some good proficiency in the Latin and French tongues. But after we left the city, and were resettled in the country, he was taken from that private school, and sent to the free school at Thame in Oxfordshire. There also was I sent, as soon as my tender age would permit; for I was indeed but young when I went, and yet seemed younger than I was, by reason of my low and little stature. It was held for some years a doubtful point, whether I should not have proved a dwarf. But after I arrived to the fifteenth year of my age, or thereabouts, I began to shoot up, and did not give over growing till I had attained the middle size and stature of men.

At this school, which at that time was in good reputation, I profited quickly, having then a natural propensity to learning; so that at the first reading over of my lesson, I commonly made myself master of it. And yet, which is strange to think of, few boys in the school wore out more birch than I. For though I was never, that I remember, whipped upon the score of not having my lesson ready, or of not saying it well; yet being a little busy boy, full of spirit, of a working head and active hand, I could not easily conform myself to the grave and sober rules, and as I then thought, severe orders of the school; but was often playing one waggish prank or other among my fellow-scholars, which subjected me to correction, so that I have come under the discipline of the rod twice in a forenoon; which yet broke no bones.

Had I been continued at this school, and in due time preferred to a higher, I might in likelihood have been a scholar; for I was observed to have a genius apt to learn. But my father having, as soon as the republican government began to settle, accepted the office of a justice of the peace, which was no way beneficial, but merely honorary and every way expensive, and put himself into a port and course of living agreeable thereto; and having also removed my brother from Thame school to Merton college in Oxford, and entered him there in the highest and most chargeable condition of a fellow-commoner, he found it needful to retrench his expenses elsewhere; the hurt of which fell upon me. For he thereupon

took me from school, to save the charge of maintaining me there; which was somewhat like plucking green fruit from the tree, and laying it by before it was come to its due ripeness, which will then shrink and wither, and lose that little juice and relish which it began to have.

Even so it fared with me. For being taken home when I was but young, and before I was well settled in my studies,—though I had made a good progress in the Latin tongue, and was entered in the Greek,—being left too much to myself, to ply or play with my books, or without them, as I pleased, I soon shook hands with my books, by shaking my books out of my hands, and laying them, by degrees, quite aside, and addicted myself to such youthful sports and pleasures as the place afforded, and my condition could reach to.

By this means I soon began to lose the little learning I had acquired at school; and by a continued disuse of my books, became at length so utterly a stranger to learning, that I could not have read, far less have understood, a sentence in Latin. Which I was so sensible of, that I warily avoided reading to others, even in an English book, lest, if I should meet with a Latin word I should shame myself by mispronouncing it.

Thus I went on, taking my swing in such vain courses as were accounted harmless recreations; entertaining my companions and familiar acquaintance, with pleasant discourses in our conversations, by the mere force of mother-wit and natural parts, without the help of school cultivation; and was accounted good company too.

But I always sorted myself with persons of ingenuity, temperance and sobriety; for I loathed obscenity in conversation, and had a natural aversion to immoderate drinking. So that in the time of my greatest vanity, I was preserved from profaneness, and the grosser evils of the world; which rendered me acceptable to persons of the best note in that country. I often waited on the Lord Wenman at his house Thame-park, about two miles from Crowell where I lived; to whose favour I held myself entitled in a two-fold respect, both as my mother was nearly related to his lady, and as he had been pleased to bestow his name upon me, when he made large promises for me at the font. He was a person of great honour and virtue, and always gave me a kind reception at his table, how often soever I came. And I have cause to think, I should have received from this lord some advantageous preferment in this world, as soon as he had found me capable of it, (though between him and my father there was not then so good an understanding as might have been wished) had I not been, in a little time after, called into the service of the best and highest Lord; and thereby lost the favour of all my friends, relations and acquaintance of this world. To the account of which most happy exchange I hasten, and therefore willingly pass over many particularities of my youthful life. Yet one passage I am willing to mention, for the effect it had upon me afterwards, which was thus:

My father being then in the commission of the peace, and going to a petty sessions at Watlington, I waited on him there. And when we came near the town, the coachman seeing a nearer and easier way than the common road, through a corn-field, and that it was wide enough for the wheels to run, without damaging the corn, turned down there. Which being observed by a husbandman, who was at plough not

far off, he ran to us, and stopping the coach, poured forth a mouthful of complaints, in none of the best language, for driving over the corn. My father mildly answered him, 'that if there was an offence committed, he must rather impute it to his servant, than himself; since he neither directed him to drive that way, nor knew which way he drove.' Yet added, 'that he was going to such an inn at the town, where if he came, he would make him full satisfaction for whatsoever damage he had sustained thereby. And so on we went, the man venting his discontent, as he went back, in angry accents. At the town, upon inquiry, we understood that it was a way often used and without damage, being broad enough; but that it was not the common road, which yet lay not far from it, and was also good enough; wherefore my father bid his man drive home that way.

It was late in the evening when we returned, and very dark; and this quarrelsome man, who had troubled himself and us in the morning, having gotten another lusty fellow, like himself, to assist him, waylaid us in the night, expecting we would return the same way we came. But when they found we did not, but took the common way, angry that they were disappointed, and unwilling to lose their purpose, which was to put an abuse upon us, they coasted over to us in the dark, and laying hold on the horses bridles, stopped them from going on. My father asking his man, what the reason was that he went not on, was answered, that there were two men at the horses heads, who held them back, and would not permit them to go forward. Whereupon my father opening the boot, step out, and I followed close at his heels. Going up to the place where the men stood, he demanded of them the reason of this assault. They said we were upon the corn. We knew, by the routs, we were not on the corn, but in the common way, and told them so. But they told us they were resolved they would not let us go on any farther, but would make us go back again. My father endeavoured, by gentle reasoning, to persuade them to forbear, and not to run themselves farther into the danger of the law, which they were run too far into already; but they rather derided him for it. Seeing therefore fair means would not work upon them, he spake more roughly to them, charging them to deliver their clubs, for each of them had a great club in his hand, somewhat like those which are called quarter-staves. They thereupon, laughing, told him they did not bring them there for that end. Thereupon my father, turning his head to me, said, 'Tom, disarm them.'

I stood ready at his elbow, waiting only for the word of command. For being naturally of a bold spirit, full then of youthful heat, and that too heightened by the sense I had, not only of the abuse, but insolent behaviour of those rude fellows—my blood began to boil and my fingers itched, as the saying is, to be dealing with them. Wherefore stepping boldly forward, to lay hold on the staff of him that was nearest to me, I said, "Sirrah, deliver your weapon." He thereupon raised his club, which was big enough to have knocked down an ox, intending no doubt to have knocked me down with it, as probably he would have done, had I not, in the twinkling of an eye, whipped out my rapier and made a pass upon him. I could not have failed running him through up to the hilt, had he stood his ground; but the sudden and unexpected sight of my bright blade glittering in the dark night, did so amaze and terrify the man, that slipping aside, he avoided my thrust; and letting his staff sink, betook himself to his heels for safety, which his companion seeing, fled also. I followed the former as fast as I could, but fear gave him wings, and made him fly swiftly; so that although I was accounted very nimble, yet the farther we ran

the more ground he gained on me, and I could not overtake him; which made me think he took shelter under some bush, which he knew where to find, though I did not. Meanwhile the coachman, who had sufficiently the outside of a man, excused himself from intermeddling, under pretence that he dared not leave his horses, and so left me to shift for myself. I was gone so far beyond my knowledge, that I understood not which way to go, till by hallooing, and being hallooeed to again, I was directed where to find my company.

We had easy means to find out who these men were, the principal of them having been at the inn in the day-time, and both quarrelled with the coachman, and threatened to be even with him when he went back; but since they came off no better in their attempt, my father thought it better not to know them, than to oblige himself to a prosecution.

At that time, and for a good while after, I had no regret upon my mind for what I had done, and designed to have done, in this case; but went on, in a sort of bravery, resolving to kill, if I could, any man that should make the like attempt, or put any affront upon us; and for that reason, seldom went afterwards upon those public services, without a loaded pistol in my pocket. But when it pleased the Lord, in his infinite goodness, to call me out of the spirit and ways of the world, and give me the knowledge of his saving Truth, whereby the actions of my past life were set in order before me—a sort of horror seized on me, when I considered how near I had been to the staining of my hands with human blood. And whensoever afterwards I went that way, and indeed as often since as the matter has come into my remembrance, my soul has blessed the Lord for my deliverance, and thanksgivings and praises have arisen in my heart,—as now, at the relating of it, they do,—to him who preserved and withheld me from shedding; man's blood. Which is the reason, I have given this account of that action, that others may be warned by it.

1658.—About this time my dear and honoured mother, who was indeed a woman of singular worth and virtue, departed this life, having a little before heard of the death of her eldest son; who falling under the displeasure of my father, for refusing to resign his interest in an estate which my father sold, and thereupon desiring that he might have leave to travel, in hopes that time and absence might work a reconciliation, went into Ireland with a person powerful there in those times, by whose means he was quickly preferred to a place of trust and profit, but lived not long to enjoy it. I mentioned before, that during my father's abode in London, in the time of the civil wars, he contracted a friendship with the lady Springett, then a widow, and afterwards married to Isaac Penington, Esq.; to continue which, he sometimes visited them at their country lodgings, as at Datchet, and at Causham Lodge, near Reading. Having heard that they were come to live upon their own estate at Chalfont in Buckinghamshire, about fifteen miles from Crowell, he went one day to visit them there, and to return at night, taking me with him.

But very much surprised we were, when, being come here, we first heard, then found, they were become Quakers; a people we had no knowledge of, and a name we had, till then, scarcely heard of. So great a change from a free, debonair and courtly sort of behaviour, which we formerly found them in, to

so strict a gravity as they now received us with, did not a little amuse us, and disappointed our expectation of such a pleasant visit as we used to have, and had now promised ourselves. Nor could my father have any opportunity, by a private conference with them, to understand the ground or occasion of this change, there being some other strangers with them, related to Isaac Penington, who came that morning from London to visit them.

For my part, I sought and at length found means to cast myself into the company of the daughter, whom I found gathering some flowers in the garden, attended by her maid, who was also a Quaker. But when I addressed myself to her after my accustomed manner, with intention to engage her in some discourse which might introduce conversation, on the foot of our former acquaintance; though she treated me with a courteous demeanour, yet, as young as she was, the gravity of her look and behaviour struck such an awe upon me, that I found myself not so much master of myself, as to pursue any further converse with her. Wherefore asking pardon for my boldness, in having intruded myself into her private walks, I withdrew, not without some disorder of mind, at least as I thought.

We staid dinner, which was very handsome, and lacked nothing to recommend it to me, but the lack of mirth and pleasant discourse, which we could neither have with them, nor, by reason of them, with one another amongst ourselves; the weightiness that was upon their spirits and countenances, keeping down the lightness that would have been up in us.

We staid notwithstanding till the rest of the company took leave of them, and then we also, doing the same, returned not greatly satisfied with our journey, nor knowing what in particular to find fault with. Yet this good effect that visit had upon my father, who was then in the commission for the peace, that it disposed him to a more favourable opinion of, and carriage towards those people when they came in his way; as not long after one of them did. For a young man who lived in Buckinghamshire, came on a first-day to the church, so called, at a town called Chinner, a mile from Crowell, having it seems, a pressure on his mind to say something to the minister of that parish. He being an acquaintance of mine, drew me sometimes to hear him, as it did then. The young man stood in the isle before the pulpit, all the time of the sermon, not speaking a word till the sermon, and prayer after it, were ended; and then spake a few words to the priest. Of which, all that I could hear was, that “the prayer of the wicked is abomination to the Lord;” and “that God hears not sinners.”

Somewhat more, I think, he did say, which I could not distinctly hear for the noise the people made; and more probably he would have said, had he not been interrupted by the officers who took him into custody, and led him out in order to carry him before my father.

When I understood that, I hastened home, that I might give my father a fair account of the matter before they came. I told him the young man behaved himself quietly and peaceably, spake not a word till the minister had quite done his service; and that what he then spake was but short, and was delivered without passion or ill language. This I knew would furnish my father with a fair ground, whereon to discharge the man if he would. And accordingly when they came, and made a high complaint against the man, (who said little for himself) my father having examined the officers who

brought him, what the words that he spake were; which they did not well agree in, and at what time he spake them; which they all agreed to be after the minister had done; and then, whether he gave the minister any reviling language, or endeavoured to raise a tumult among the people? which they could not charge him with; not finding that he had broken the law, he counselled the young man to be careful that he did not make or occasion any public disturbances—and so dismissed him. Which I was glad of.

Some time after this, my father having gotten some further account of the people called Quakers, and being desirous to be informed concerning their principles, made another visit to Isaac Penington and his wife, at their house called the Grange in Peter's Chalfont, and took both my sisters and me with him.

It was in the tenth month, in the year 1659, that we went there, where we found a very kind reception, and tarried some days; one day at least the longer, for that, while we were there, a meeting was appointed at a place about a mile from there, to which we were invited to go, and willingly went. It was held in a farm-house called 'The Grove,' which having formerly been a gentleman's seat, had a very large hall, and that well filled.

To this meeting came Edward Burrough, besides other preachers, as Thomas Curtis and James Naylor; but none spake there at that time but Edward Burrough. Next to whom, as it were under him, it was my lot to sit on a stool by the side of a long table on which he sat, and I drank in his words with desire; for they not only answered my understanding, but warmed my heart with a certain heat, which I had not till then felt from the ministry of any man.

When the meeting was ended, our friends took us home with them again; and after supper, the evenings being long, the servants of the family, who were Quakers, were called in, and we all sat down in silence. But long we had not so sat, before Edward Burrough began to speak among us. And although he spake not long, yet what he said did touch, as I suppose, my father's religious copy-hold, as the phrase is. And he having been from his youth a professor, though not joined in that which is called close communion with any one sort, and valuing himself upon the knowledge he esteemed himself to have in the various notions of each profession, thought he had now a fair opportunity to display his knowledge, and thereupon began to make objections against what had been delivered. The subject of the discourse was, the universal free grace of God to all mankind. To which he opposed the Calvinistic tenet of particular and personal predestination. In defence of which indefensible notion, he found himself more at a loss than he expected. Edward Burrough said not much to him upon it, though what he said, was close and cogent. But James Naylor interposing, handled the subject with so much perspicuity and clear demonstration, that his reasoning seemed to be irresistible; and so I suppose my father found it, which made him willing to drop the discourse.

As for Edward Burrough, he was a brisk young man, of a ready tongue, and might have been, for aught I then knew, a scholar, which made me the less to admire his way of reasoning. But what dropped from James Naylor had the greater force upon me, because he looked but like a plain simple country-man, having the appearance of a husbandman or a shepherd.

As my father was not able to maintain the argument on his side, so neither did they seem willing to drive it on to an extremity on their side. But treating him in a soft and gentle manner, after a while, let fall the discourse, and then we withdrew to our respective chambers.

The next morning we prepared to return home, that is, my father, my youngest sister, and myself; for my eldest sister was gone before by the stage coach to London,—and when, having taken leave of our friends, we went forth,—they with Edward Burrough, accompanying us to the gate, he there directed his speech in a few words to each of us severally, according to the sense he had of our several conditions. And when we were gone off, and they gone in again, they asked him what he thought of us? He answered them, as they afterwards told me, to this effect; 'As for the old man, he is settled on his lees and the young woman is light and airy; but the young man is reached, and may do well if he does not lose it.' And surely that which he said to me, or rather that spirit in which he spake it, took such fast hold on me, that I felt sadness and trouble come over me, though I did not distinctly understand what I was troubled for. I knew not what I ailed,—but I knew that it was something more than ordinary, and my heart was very heavy.

I found it was not so with my father and sister; for, as I rode after the coach, I could hear them talk pleasantly, one to the other, but they could not discern how it was with me, because, riding on horse-back, I kept much out of sight.

By the time we got home it was night, and the next day, being the first-day of the week, I went in the afternoon to hear the minister of Chinner; and this was the last time I ever went to hear any of that function. After the sermon I went with him to his house, and in a freedom of discourse, which, from a certain intimacy that was between us, I commonly used with him, told him where I had been, what company I had met with there, and what observations I had made to myself thereupon. He seemed to understand as little of them as I had done before, and civilly abstained from casting any unhandsome reflections on them.

I had a desire to go to another meeting of the Quakers, and bid my father's man inquire if there was any in the country thereabouts. He thereupon told me, he had heard at Isaac Penington's, that there was to be a meeting at High-wiccomb on Thursday next.

There therefore I went, though it was seven miles from me. And that I might be rather thought to go out a coursing, than to a meeting, I let my greyhound run by my horse-side.

When I came there, and had set up my horse at an inn, I was at a loss how to find the house where the meeting was to be. I knew it not and was ashamed to ask after it. Wherefore, having ordered the hostler to take care of my dog, I went into the street and stood at the inn-gate, musing with myself what course to take. But I had not stood long, before I saw a horseman riding along the street, whom I remembered I had seen before at Isaac Penington's, and he put up his horse at the same inn. Him therefore I resolved to follow, supposing he was going to the meeting, as indeed he was.

Being come to the house, which proved to be John Raunce's, I saw the people sitting together in an outer room; wherefore I stepped in and sat down on the first void seat, the end of a bench just within the door, having my sword by my side and black clothes on, which drew some eyes upon me. It was not long before one stood up and spake, whom I was afterwards well acquainted with; his name was Samuel Thornton: and what he spake was very suitable and of good service to me, for it reached home as if it had been directed to me.

As soon as ever the meeting was ended, and the people began to rise, I being next the door, stepped out quickly, and hastening to my inn took horse immediately howewards; and so far as I remember, my having been gone was not taken notice of by my father.

This latter meeting was like the clinching of a nail; confirming, and fastening in my mind, those good principles which had sunk into me at the former. My understanding began to open, and I felt some stirrings in my breast, tending to the work of a new creation in me. The general trouble and confusion of mind, which had for some days lain heavy upon me, and pressed me down, without a distinct discovery of the particular cause for which it came, began now to wear off, and some glimmerings of light began to break forth in me, which let me see my inward state and condition towards God. The light, which before had shone in my darkness, and the darkness could not comprehend it, began now to shine out of darkness, and in some measure discovered to me, what it was that had before clouded me, and brought that sadness and trouble upon me. I saw, that although I had been in a great degree preserved from the common immoralities and gross pollutions of the world, yet the spirit of the world had hitherto ruled in me, and led me into pride, flattery, vanity and superfluity; all which were naught. I found there were many plants growing in me, which were not of the heavenly Father's planting; and that all these, of whatever sort or kind they were, or how specious soever they might appear, must be plucked up.

Now was all my former life ripped up, and my sins, by degrees, were set in order before me. And though they looked not with so black a hue and so deep a dye, as those of the lowdest sort of people did, yet I found that all sin, even that which had the fairest and finest show, as well as that which is more coarse and foul, brought guilt, and with and for guilt, condemnation, on the soul that sinned. This I felt, and was greatly bowed down under the sense thereof.

Now also did I receive a new law, an inward law, superadded to the outward, "the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus," which wrought in me against all evil, not only in deed and in word, but even in thought also; so that every thing was brought to judgment, and judgment passed upon all. So that I could not any longer go on in my former ways and course of life, for when I did, judgment took hold upon me for it. Thus the Lord was graciously pleased to deal with me, in a manner somewhat like He had dealt with His people Israel of old, when they had transgressed His righteous law, whom by His prophet He called back, and required "to put away the evil of their doings;" bidding them, first cease to do evil; then, learn to do well, before He would admit them to reason with Him; and before He would impart to them the effects of His free mercy, Isa. 1:16, 27.

I was now required by this inward and spiritual law, "the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus," to

“put away the evil of my doings,” and to “cease to do evil.” And what, in particulars, the evil was which I was required to put away, and to cease from, that measure of the divine light, which was now manifested in me, discovered to me; and what the light made manifest to be evil, judgment passed upon.

So that here began to be a way cast up before me, for me to walk in—a direct and plain way; so plain, that a way-faring man, how weak and simple soever, though a fool to the wisdom, and in the judgment of the world, could not err, while he continued to walk in it; the error coming in by his going out of it. And this way with respect to me, I saw was that measure of divine light which was manifested in me, by which the evil of my doings, which I was to put away and cease from, was discovered to me.

By this divine light then I saw, that though I had not the evil of the common uncleanness, debauchery, profaneness and pollutions of the world to put away, because I had, through the great goodness of God, and a civil education, been preserved out of those grosser evils; yet I had many other evils to put away, and to cease from; some of which were not, by the world which lies in wickedness, accounted evils; but by the light of Christ were made manifest to me to be evils, and as such condemned in me.

As particularly, those fruits and effects of pride, that discover themselves in the vanity and superfluity of apparel; which I, as far as my ability would extend to, took alas! too much delight in. This evil of my doings, I was required to put away and cease from; and judgment lay upon me till I did so. Wherefore in obedience to the inward law, which agreed with the outward, (1 Tim. 2:9. Pet. 3:3. 1 Tim. 6:8. Jam. 1:21). I took off from my apparel those unnecessary trimmings of lace, ribbons and useless buttons, which had no real service, but were set on only for that which was, by mistake, called ornament, and I ceased to wear rings.

Again, the giving of flattering titles to men, between whom and me there was not any relation, to which such titles could be pretended to belong. This was an evil I had been much addicted to, and was accounted a ready artist in it; therefore this also was I required to put away and cease from. So that from that time forward, I dared not say sir, master, my lord, madam (or my dame) or say your servant, to any one to whom I did not stand in the real relation of a servant; which I had never done to any.

Again, respect of persons, in uncovering the head, and bowing the knee or body in salutations, was a practice I had been much in the use of. This is one of the vain customs of the world, introduced by the spirit of the world, instead of the true honour, of which this is a false representation, and used in deceit, as a token of respect, by persons one to another, who bear no real respect one to the other. And besides, it is a type and proper emblem of that divine honour which all ought to pay to Almighty God, and which all, of all sorts, who take upon them the Christian name, appear in when they offer their prayers to him, and therefore should not be given to men, I found this to be one of those evils which I had been too long doing, therefore I was now required to put it away, and cease from it.

Again, the corrupt and unsound form of speaking in the plural number to a single person, you to one, instead of thou, contrary to the pure, plain, and single language of Truth, thou to one, and you to more

than one, which had always been used by God to men, and men to God, as well as one to another, from the oldest record of time, till corrupt men, for corrupt ends, in later and corrupt times, to flatter, fawn, and work upon the corrupt nature in men, brought in that false and senseless way of speaking you to one; which has since corrupted the modern languages, and has greatly debased the spirits, and depraved the manners of men.¹ This evil custom I had been as forward in as others, and this I was now called out of, and required to cease from. These, and many more evil customs, which had sprung up in the night of darkness, and general apostasy from the Truth and true religion, were now by the in-shining of this pure ray of divine light in my conscience, gradually discovered to me to be what I ought to cease from, shun, and stand a witness against.

But so subtilely, and withal so powerfully did the enemy work upon the weak part in me, as to persuade me that in these things I ought to make a difference between my father and all other men; and that therefore, though I did disuse these tokens of respect to other's, yet I ought still to use them towards him, as he was my father. And so far did this wile of his prevail upon me, through a fear lest I should do amiss, in withdrawing any sort of respect or honour from my father, which was due unto him, that being thereby beguiled, I continued for a while to demean myself in the same manner towards him, with respect both to language and gesture, as I had always done before. And so long as I did so, standing bare before him, and giving him the accustomed language, he did not express, whatever he thought, any dislike of me.

But as to myself, and the work begun in me, I found it was not enough for me to cease to do evil; though that was a good and a great step. I had another lesson before me, which was, to learn to do well; which I could by no means do, till I had given up, with full purpose of mind, to cease from doing evil. And when I had done that, the enemy took advantage of my weakness to mislead me again.

For whereas I ought to have waited in the light, for direction and guidance into and in the way of well-doing, and not to have moved till the divine spirit, a manifestation of which the Lord had been pleased to give me, to profit with, the enemy transforming himself into the appearance of an angel of light, offered himself in that appearance, to be my guide and leader into the performance of religious exercises. And I, not then knowing the wiles of satan, and being eager to be doing some acceptable service to God, too readily yielded myself to the conduct of my enemy, instead of my friend.

He thereupon humouring the warmth and zeal of my spirit, put me upon religious performances in my own will, in my own time, and in my own strength; which in themselves were good, and would have

1 At this time in history, the correct and plain use of "thee" and "thou" to a single person was beginning to give way to "you" and "your." Most modern English speakers are unaware that the words "you" and "your" were originally plural pronouns used only to address two or more people, whereas "thee" and "thou" were used to address one person. In the 1600's, it became fashionable (as a means of showing honor or flattery) to use the plural "you" or "your" in addressing people of higher social status, while "thee" and "thou" were reserved for servants, children, or people of lower social or economic position. Early Friends stuck to what was then considered "plain language" (using thee and thou to every single person, and you and your to two or more), rather than showing preferment by addressing certain individuals in the plural. However, throughout most of this journal, *thee* and *thou* have been changed to *you* for the ease of the modern reader.

been profitable to me, and acceptable to the Lord, if they had been performed in his will, his time, and in the ability which he gives. But being wrought in the will of man, and at the prompting of the evil one, no wonder that it did me hurt instead of good.

I read abundantly in the Bible, and would set myself tasks in reading; enjoining myself to read so many chapters, sometimes a whole book, or long epistle at a time. And I thought that time well spent, though I was not much the wiser for what I had read, reading it too cursorily, and without the true guide, the Holy Spirit, which alone could open the understanding, and give the true sense of what was read. I prayed often, and drew out my prayers to a great length; and appointed certain set times to pray at, and a certain number of prayers to say in a day; yet knew not, meanwhile, what true prayer was. This stands not in words, though the words that are uttered in the movings of the Holy Spirit, are very available; but in the breathing of the soul to the heavenly Father, through the operation of the Holy Spirit, who makes intercession sometimes in words, and sometimes with sighs and groans only, which the Lord vouchsafes to hear and answer.

This will-worship, which all is that is performed in the will of man and not in the movings of the Holy Spirit, was a great hurt to me, and hindrance of my spiritual growth in the way of Truth. But my heavenly Father, who knew the sincerity of my soul to him, and the hearty desire I had to serve him, had compassion on me; and in due time was graciously pleased to illuminate my understanding farther, and to open in me an eye to discern the false spirit, and its way of working, from the true; and to reject the former, and cleave to the latter.

But though the enemy had by his subtlety, gained such advantages over me, yet I went on notwithstanding, and firmly persisted in my godly resolution of ceasing from, and denying those things which I was now convinced in my conscience were evil. And on this account a great trial came quickly on me. For the general Quarter Sessions for the peace coming on, my father willing to excuse himself from a dirty journey, commanded me to get up betimes and go to Oxford, and deliver in the recognizances he had taken; and bring him an account what justices were on the bench, and what principal pleas were before them; which he knew I knew how to do, having often attended him on those services.

I, who knew how it stood with me better than he did, felt a weight come over me as soon as he had spoken the word. For I presently saw it would bring a very great exercise upon me. But having never resisted his will in anything that was lawful, as this was, I attempted not to make any excuse, but ordering a horse to be ready for me early in the morning, I went to bed, having great strugglings in my breast.

For the enemy came in upon me like a flood, and set many difficulties before me, swelling them up to the highest pitch, by representing them as mountains which I should never be able to get over; and, alas! that faith which could remove such mountains and cast them into the sea, was but very small and weak in me.

He cast into my mind, not only how I should behave myself in court, and despatch the business I was

sent about; but how I should demean myself towards my acquaintance, of which I had many in the city, with whom I was wont to be jolly; whereas now I could not put off my hat, nor bow to any of them, nor give them their honorary titles, as they are called, nor use the corrupt language of you to any one of them, but must keep to the plain and true language of thou and thee.

Much of this nature revolved in my mind, thrown in by the enemy to discourage and cast me down. And I had none to have recourse to for counsel or help, but the Lord alone. To whom therefore I poured forth my supplications, with earnest cries and breathings of soul, that He, in whom all power was, would enable me to go through this great exercise, and keep me faithful to himself therein. And after some time. He was pleased to compose my mind to stillness, and I went to rest.

Early next morning I got up, and found my spirit pretty calm and quiet, yet not without a fear upon me, lest I should slip and let fall the testimony which I had to bear. And as I rode, a frequent cry ran through me to the Lord, in this way; "O my God, preserve me faithful, whatever befalls me! Permit me not to be drawn into evil, how much scorn and contempt soever may be cast upon me!"

Thus was my spirit exercised on the way almost continually. And when I came within a mile or two of the city, whom should I meet upon the way, coming from there, but Edward Burrough! I rode in a mountier-cap, a dress more used then than now, and so did he; and because the weather was exceedingly sharp, we both had drawn our caps down, to shelter our faces from the cold, and by that means neither of us knew the other, but passed by without taking notice one of the other, till a few days after, meeting again, and observing each others dress, we recollected where we had so lately met. Then thought I with myself, O! how glad should I have been of a word of encouragement and counsel from him, when I was under that weighty exercise of mind! But the Lord saw it was not good for me; that my reliance might be wholly upon him, and not on man.

When I had set up my horse, I went directly to the hall where the sessions were held, where I had been but a very little while, before a knot of my old acquaintances espying me, came to me. One of these was a scholar in his gown; another a surgeon of that city, both my school-fellows and fellow-boarders at Thame school, and the third a country gentleman, with whom I had long been very familiar.

When they were come up to me, they all saluted me after the usual manner, putting off their hats and bowing, and saying, 'your humble servant, sir;' expecting, no doubt, the like from me. But when they saw me stand still, not moving my cap, or bowing my knee in the way of compliment to them, they were amazed, and looked first one upon another, then upon me, and then one upon another again for a while, without speaking a word. At length the surgeon, a brisk young man, who stood nearest to me, clapping his hand in a familiar way upon my shoulder, and smiling on me, said, 'what! Tom, a Quaker!' To which I readily and cheerfully answered, 'yes, a Quaker.' And as the words passed out of my mouth, I felt joy spring in my heart; for I rejoiced that I had not been drawn out by them, into a compliance with them, and that I had strength and boldness given me, to confess myself to be one of that despised people.

They staid not long with me, nor said any more, that I remember, to me; but looking somewhat confusedly one upon another, after a while took their leave of me, going off in the same ceremonious manner as they came.

After they were gone, I walked awhile about the hall, and went up nearer to the court, to observe both what justices were on the bench, and what business they had before them. And I went in fear, not of what they could or would have done to me, if they should have taken notice of me, but lest I should be surprised, and drawn unwarily into that which I was to keep out of.

It was not long before the court adjourned to go to dinner, and that time I took to go to the clerk of the peace at his house, whom I was well acquainted with. So soon as I came into the room where he was, he came and met me, and saluted me after his manner; for he had a great respect for my father, and a kind regard for me. And though he was at first somewhat startled at my carriage and language, yet he treated me very civilly, without any reflection or show of lightness. I delivered him the recognizances which my father had sent, and having done the business I came upon, withdrew, and went to my inn to refresh myself, and then to return home. But when I was ready to take horse, looking out into the street, I saw two or three justices standing just in the way where I was to ride. This brought a fresh concern upon me. I knew if they saw me, they would know me; and I concluded if they knew me, they would stop me to inquire after my father; and I doubted how I should come off with them.

This doubting brought weakness on me, and that weakness led to contrivance how I might avoid this trial. I knew the city pretty well, and remembered there was a back way, which though somewhat about, would bring me out of town, without passing by those justices; yet I was unwilling to go that way. Wherefore I staid a little time, in hopes they would have parted company, or removed to some other place out of my way. But when I had waited till I was uneasy for losing so much time, having entered into reasonings with flesh and blood, the weakness prevailed over me, and away I went the back way; which brought trouble and grief upon my spirit for having shunned the cross.

But the Lord looked on me with a tender eye, and seeing my heart was right to him, and that what I had done was merely through weakness and fear of falling, and that I was sensible of my failing therein, and sorry for it, he was graciously pleased to pass it by, and speak peace to me again. When I went in the morning, my heart was full of breathing prayer to the Lord, that he would vouchsafe to be with me, and uphold and carry me through that day's exercise; so now at my return in the evening, before I got home, my heart was full of thankful acknowledgments, and praises unto him for his great goodness and favour to me, in having thus far preserved, and kept me from falling into any thing that might have brought dishonour to his holy name, which I had now taken on me.

But notwithstanding it was thus with me, and that I found peace and acceptance with the Lord in some good degree, according to my obedience to the convictions I had received by his Holy Spirit in me; yet was not the veil so done away, or fully rent, but that there still remained a cloud upon my understanding, with respect to my carriage towards my father. And that notion which the enemy had brought into my mind, that I ought to put such a difference between him and all others, as that on the account of

paternal relation I should still deport myself towards him, both in gesture and language, as I had always heretofore done; did yet prevail with me. So that when I came home, I went to my father bare-headed as I used to do, and gave him a particular account of the business he had given me in command, in such manner, that he observing no alteration in my carriage towards him, found no cause to take offence at me.

I had felt for some time before, an earnest desire of mind to go again to Isaac Penington's. And I began to question whether, when my father should come, as I concluded before long he would, to understand I inclined to settle among the people called Quakers, he would permit me the command of his horses as before. Wherefore, in the morning when I went to Oxford, I gave direction to a servant of his, to go that day to a gentleman of my acquaintance, who I knew had a riding nag to put off either by sale, or to be kept for his work, and desire him, in my name, to send him to me; which he did, and I found him in the stable when I came home.

On this nag I designed to ride next day to Isaac Penington's; and in order thereto, arose betimes, and got myself ready for the journey. But because I would pay all due respect to my father, and not go without his consent, or knowledge at the least, I sent one up to him, for he was not yet stirring, to acquaint him, that I had a purpose to go to Isaac Penington's; and desired to know if he pleased to command me any service to them. He sent me word, he would speak with me before I went, and would have me come up to him; which I did, and stood by his bedside.

Then in a mild and gentle tone he said, 'I understand you have a mind to go to Mr. Penington's. I answered, I have so. 'Why,' said he, 'I wonder why you should. You were there, you know, but a few days ago, and unless you had business with them, don't you think it will look oddly?' I said, I thought not, 'I doubt,' said he 'you'll tire them with your company, and make them think they shall be troubled with you.' If, replied I, I find any thing of that, I'll make the shorter stay. 'But,' said he, 'can you propose any sort of business with them, more than a mere visit?' Yes, said I, I propose to myself not only to see them, but to have some discourse with them. 'Why,' said he, in a tone a little harsher, 'I hope you don't incline to be of their way.' Truly, answered I, I like them and their way very well, so far as I yet understand it; and I am willing to go to them, that I may understand it better.

Thereupon he began to reckon up a bead roll of faults against the Quakers; telling me they were a rude unmannerly people, who would not give civil respect or honour to their superiors, no not to magistrates; that they held many dangerous principles; that they were an immodest shameless people; and that one of them stripped himself stark naked, and went in that unseemly manner about the streets, at fairs, and on market-days in great towns.

To all the other charges, I answered only, that perhaps they might be either misreported or misunderstood, as the best of people had sometimes been. But to the last charge, of going naked, a particular answer, by way of instance, was just then brought into my mind, and put into my mouth, which I had not thought of before; and that was the example of Isaiah, who went naked among the people for a long time. Isa. 20:4. 'Aye,' said my father, 'but you must consider that he was a prophet of the Lord, and had

an express command from God to go so,' Yes, sir, replied I, I do consider that; but I consider also, that the Jews among whom he lived, did not own him for a prophet, nor believe that he had such a command from God. And, added I, how know we but that this Quaker may be a prophet too, and might be commanded to do as he did, for some reason which we understand not?

This put my father to a stand; so that letting fall his charges against the Quakers, he only said, 'I would wish you not to go so soon, but take a little time to consider of it; you may visit Mr. Penington hereafter.' No, sir, replied I, pray don't hinder my going now, for I have so strong a desire to go, that I do not well know how to forbear. And as I spake those words, I withdrew gently to the chamber-door, and then hastening down stairs, went immediately to the stable, where finding my horse ready bridled, I forthwith mounted and went off, lest I should receive a countermand.

This discourse with my father had cast me somewhat back in my journey, and it being fifteen long miles there, the ways bad, and my nag but small, it was in the afternoon that I got there. And understanding by the servant who took my horse, that there was then a meeting in the house, as there was weekly on that day, which was the fourth-day of the week, though I till then understood it not, I hastened in; and knowing the rooms, went directly to the little parlour, where I found a few Friends sitting together in silence, and I sat down among them well satisfied, though without words.

When the meeting was ended, and those of the company who were strangers, withdrawn, I addressed myself to Isaac Penington and his wife, who received me courteously; but not knowing what exercises I had been in, and yet was under, nor having heard any thing of me since I had been there before in another garb, were not forward at first to lay sudden hands on me; which I observed and did not dislike. But as they came to see a change in me, not in habit only, but in gesture, speech and carriage, and which was more, in countenance also, for the exercise I had passed through and yet was under, had imprinted a visible character of gravity upon my face; they were exceedingly kind and tender towards me.

There was then in the family, a Friend whose name was Anne Curtis, the wife of Thomas Curtis of Reading, who was come upon a visit to them, and particularly to see Mary Penington's daughter Guli, who had been ill of the small-pox since I had been there before. Between Mary Penington and this Friend, I observed some private discourse and whisperings, and I had an apprehension that it was upon something that concerned me. Wherefore I took the freedom to ask Mary Penington, if my coming there had occasioned any inconvenience in the family? She asked me if I had had the small-pox? I told her no. She then told me, her daughter had newly had them, and though she was well recovered of them, she had not as yet been down amongst them; but intended to come down, and set with them in the parlour that evening; yet would rather forbear till another time, than endanger me. And that that was the matter they had been discoursing of. I assured her, that I had always been, and then more especially, was free from any apprehension of danger in that respect; and therefore entreated that her daughter might come down. And although they were somewhat unwilling to yield to it, in regard of me, yet my importunity prevailed, and after supper she did come down and sit with us; and though the marks of the

distemper were fresh upon her, yet they made no impression upon me, faith keeping out fear.

We spent much of the evening in retiredness of mind, our spirits being weightily gathered inward; so that not much discourse passed among us, neither they to me, nor I to them, offered any occasion. Yet I had good satisfaction in that stillness, feeling my spirit drawn near to the Lord, and to them therein.

Before I went to bed, they let me know that there was to be a meeting at Wiccomb next day, and that some of the family would go to it. I was very glad of it, for I greatly desired to go to meetings, and this fell very aptly, it being in my way home. Next morning Isaac Penington himself went, having Anne Curtis with him, and I accompanied them.

At Wiccomb we met with Edward Burrough, who came from Oxford there, the day that I, going there, met him on the way; and having both our mountier-caps on, we recollected that we had met, and passed by each other on the road unknown.

This was a monthly meeting, consisting of Friends chiefly, who gathered to it from several parts of the country thereabouts; so that it was pretty large, and was held in a fair room in Jeremiah Stevens' house; the room where I had been at a meeting before in John Raunce's house being too little to receive us.

A very good meeting was this in itself and to me. Edward Burrough's ministry came forth among us in life and power, and the assembly was covered therewith. I also, according to my small capacity, had a share in it. For I felt some of that divine power working my spirit into a great tenderness, and not only confirming me in the course I had already entered, and strengthening me to go on therein; but also rending the veil somewhat further, and clearing my understanding in some other things which I had not seen before. For the Lord was pleased to make his discoveries to me by degrees, that the sight of too great a work, and too many enemies to encounter at once, might not discourage and make me faint.

When the meeting was ended, the Friends of the town taking notice that I was the man who had been at their meeting the week before, whom they then did not know, some of them came and spake lovingly to me, and would have had me staid with them; but Edward Burrough going home with Isaac Penington, he invited me to go back with him, which I willingly consented to. For the love I had more particularly to Edward Burrough, through whose ministry I had received the first awakening stroke, drew me to desire his company, and so away we rode together.

But I was somewhat disappointed of my expectation; for I hoped he would have given me both opportunity and encouragement to have opened myself to him, and to have poured forth my complaints, fears, doubts and questionings into his bosom. But he, being sensible that I was truly reached, and that the witness of God was raised, and the work of God rightly begun in me—chose to leave me to the guidance of the good spirit in myself, the Counsellor that could resolve all doubts, that I might not have any dependence on man. Wherefore, although he was naturally of an open and free temper and carriage, and was afterwards always very familiar and affectionately kind to me; yet at this time he kept himself somewhat reserved and showed only common kindness to me.

Next day we parted. He for London, I for home, under a very great weight and exercise upon my spirit. For I now saw, in and by the farther openings of the divine light in me, that the enemy, by his false reasonings, had beguiled and misled me, with respect to my carriage towards my father; that the honour due to parents did not consist in uncovering the head, and bowing the body to them; but in a ready obedience to their lawful commands, and in performing all needful services to them. Wherefore, as I was greatly troubled for what I already had done in that case, though it was through ignorance; so I plainly felt I could no longer continue therein, without drawing on myself the guilt of wilful disobedience; which I well knew, would draw after it divine displeasure and judgment.

Hereupon the enemy assaulted me afresh, setting before me the danger I should run myself into, of provoking my father to use severity towards me; and perhaps to cast me utterly off. But over this temptation the Lord, whom I cried unto, supported me, and gave me faith to believe, that he would bear me through whatever might befall me on that account. Wherefore I resolved, in the strength which he should give me, to be faithful to his requirings, whatever might come of it.

Thus labouring under various exercises on the way, I at length got home, expecting I should have but a rough reception from my father. But when I came home, I understood my father was from home. Wherefore I sat down by the fire in the kitchen, keeping my mind retired to the Lord, with breathings of spirit to him, that I might be preserved from falling.

After some time I heard the coach drive in, which put me into a little fear, and a sort of shivering came over me. But by the time he was alighted and come in, I had pretty well recovered myself; and as soon as I saw him, I rose up, and advanced a step or two towards him, with my head covered, and said, "Isaac Penington and his wife remember their love to thee."

He made a stop to hear what I said, and observing that I did not stand bare, and that I used the word thee to him; he, with a stern countenance, and tone that spake high displeasure, only said, 'I shall talk with you, sir, another time;' and so hastening from me went into the parlour, and I saw him no more that night.

Though I foresaw there was a storm arising, the apprehension of which was uneasy to me, yet the peace which I felt in my own breast, raised in me a return of thanksgivings to the Lord, for his gracious supporting hand, which had thus far carried me through this exercise; with humble cries in spirit to him, that he would vouchsafe to stand by me in it to the end, and uphold me, that I might not fall.

My spirit longed to be among Friends, and to be at some meeting with them on the first-day, which now drew on, this being the sixth-day night. Wherefore I proposed to go to Oxford on the morrow, which was the seventh-day of the week, having heard there was a meeting there. Accordingly, having ordered my horse to be made ready betimes. I got up in the morning and made myself ready also. Yet before I would go, that I might be as observant to my father as I possibly could, I desired my sister to go up to him in his chamber, and acquaint him, that I had a mind to go to Oxford; and desired to know, if he pleased to command me any service there. He bid her tell me, he would not have me go, till he

had spoken with me. And getting up immediately, he hastened down to me before he was quite dressed.

As soon as he saw me standing with my hat on, his passion transporting him, he fell upon me with both his fists; and having by that means somewhat vented his anger, he plucked off my hat and threw it away. Then stepping hastily out to the stable, and seeing my borrowed nag stand ready saddled and bridled, he asked his man from where that horse came? who telling him he fetched it from Mr. _____ such a one's: 'then ride him presently back,' said my father, 'and tell Mr. _____ I desire he will never lend my son a horse again, unless he brings a note from me.' The poor fellow, who loved me well, would eagerly have made excuses and delays; but my father was positive in his command, and so urgent, that he would not let him stay so much as to take his breakfast, though he had five miles to ride, nor would he himself stir from the stable, till he had seen the man mounted and gone.

Then coming in he went up into his chamber, to make himself more fully ready, thinking he had me safe enough now my horse was gone; for I took so much delight in riding, that I seldom went on foot.

But while he was dressing himself in his chamber, I understood what had been done, and changing my boots for shoes, took another hat, and acquainting my sister, who loved me very well, and in whom I could confide, where I meant to go, went out privately and walked away to Wiccomb, having seven long miles there, which yet seemed little and easy to me, from the desire I had to be among Friends.

As thus I travelled all alone, under a load of grief, from the sense I had of the opposition and hardship I was to expect from my father—the enemy took advantage to assault me again, casting a doubt into my mind, whether I had done well, in thus coming away from my father, without his leave or knowledge I was quiet and peaceable in my spirit before this question was darted into me; but after that, disturbance and trouble seized upon me, so that I was at a stand what to do; whether to go forward or backward. Fear of offending inclined me to go back; but the desire of the meeting, and to be with Friends, pressed me to go forward, I stood still a while, to consider and weigh the matter as well as I could. I was satisfied, that I had not left my father with any intention of undutifulness or disrespect to him; but merely in obedience to that drawing of spirit, which I was persuaded was of the Lord, to join with his people in worshipping him; and this made me easy.

But then the enemy, to make me uneasy again, objected. How could that drawing be of the Lord, which drew me to disobey my father? I considered thereupon the extent of paternal power; which I found was not wholly arbitrary and unlimited, but had bounds set to it: that as in civil matters, it was restrained to things lawful; so in spiritual and religious cases, it had not a compulsory power over conscience; which ought to be subject to the heavenly Father. And therefore, though obedience to parents be enjoined to children; yet it is with this limitation, in the Lord: “children, obey your parents in the Lord; for this is right.”

This turned the scale for going forward, and so on I went. And yet I was not wholly free from some fluctuations of mind, from the besettings of the enemy. Wherefore, although I knew that outward signs did not properly belong to the gospel dispensation; yet for my better assurance, I did, in fear and great

humility, beseech the Lord, that he would be pleased so far to condescend to the weakness of his servant, as to give me a sign, by which I might certainly know, whether my way was right before him or not?

The sign which I asked was, that if I had done wrong in coming as I did, I might be rejected, or but coldly received at the place I was going to; but if my undertaking was right in his sight, he would give me favour with them I went to, so that they should receive me with hearty kindness and demonstrations of love. Accordingly, when I came to John Raunce's house, which, being so much a stranger to all, I chose to go, because I understood the meeting was commonly held there; they received me with more than ordinary kindness, especially Frances Raunce, John Raunce's wife, who was both a grave and motherly woman, and had a hearty love to Truth, and tenderness towards all that in sincerity sought after it. This kind reception, confirming me in the belief that my undertaking was approved of by the Lord, gave great satisfaction and ease to my mind; and I was thankful to the Lord therefor.

Thus it fared with me there; but at home it fared otherwise with my father. He supposing I had betaken myself to my chamber, when he took my hat from me, made no inquiry after me till evening came; and then sitting by the fire, and considering that the weather was very cold, he said to my sister, who sat by him, 'Go up to your brother's chamber, and call him down; it may be he will sit there else, in a sullen fit, till he has caught cold.' 'Alas! sir,' said she, 'he is not in his chamber, nor in the house neither.' At that my father startling, said, 'Why where is he then?' 'I know not, sir,' said she, 'where he is; but I know that when he saw you had sent away his horse, he put on shoes, and went out on foot, and I have not seen him since.' 'And indeed, sir,' added she, 'I don't wonder at his going away, considering how you used him.' This put my father into a great fright, doubting I was gone quite away; and so great a passion of grief seized on him, that he forbore not to weep, and cry out aloud, so that the family heard him, 'Oh! my son! I shall never see him more! For he is of so bold and resolute a spirit, that he will run himself into danger, and so may be thrown into some goal or other, where he may lie and die before I can hear of him.' Then bidding her light him up to his chamber, he went immediately to bed, where he lay restless and groaning, and often bemoaning himself and me, for the greatest part of the night.

Next morning my sister sent a man, whom for his love to me, she knew she could trust, to give me this account; and though by him she sent me also fresh linen for my use, in case I should go farther, or stay out longer; yet she desired me to come home as soon as I could.

This account was very uneasy to me. I was much grieved that I had occasioned so much grief to my father. I would have returned that evening after the meeting, but the Friends would not permit it; for the meeting would in likelihood end late, the days being short, and the way was long and dirty. And besides, John Raunce told me, that he had something on his mind to speak to my father, and that if I would stay till the next day, he would go down with me; hoping perhaps, that while my father was under this sorrow for me, he might work some good upon him. Hereupon, concluding to stay till the morrow, I dismissed the man with the things he brought, bidding him tell my sister, I intended, God willing, to return home to-morrow; and charging him not to let any body else know that he had seen

me, or where he had been.

Next morning John Raunce and I set out, and when we were come to the end of the town, we agreed that he should go before and knock at the great gate, and I would come a little after, and go in by the back way. He did so; and when a servant came to open the gate, he asking if the justice were at home, she told him, 'yes;' and desiring him to come in and sit down in the Hall, went and acquainted her master, that there was one who desired to speak with him. He, supposing it was one that came for justice, went readily into the hall to him. But he was not a little surprised when he found it was a Quaker; yet not knowing on what account he came, he staid to hear his business. But when he found it was about me, he fell somewhat sharply on him.

In this time I was come by the back way into the kitchen, and hearing my father's voice so loud, I began to doubt things wrought not well; but I was soon assured of that. For my father having quickly enough of a Quaker's company, left John Raunce in the hall, and came into the kitchen, where he was more surprised to find me. The sight of my hat upon my head, made him presently forget that I was that son of his, whom he had so lately lamented as lost; and his passion of grief turning into anger, he could not contain himself; but running upon me, with both his hands, first violently snatched off my hat and threw it away; then giving me some buffets on my head, he said, 'Sirrah, get you up to your chamber.' I forthwith went; he following me at the heels, and now and then giving me a blow on the ear; which, as the way to my chamber lay through the hall where John Raunce was, he, poor man, might see and be sorry for, as I doubt not he was, but could not help me.

This was surely an unaccountable thing, that my father should, but a day before, express so high a sorrow for me, as fearing he should never see me any more; and yet now, so soon as he did see me, should fly upon me with such violence, and that only because I did not put off my hat, which he knew I did not keep on in disrespect to him, but upon a religious principle. But as this hat honour, as it is accounted, was grown to be a great idol, in those times more especially, so the Lord was pleased to engage his servants in a steady testimony against it, what suffering soever was brought upon them for it. And though some, who have been called into the Lord's vineyard at later hours, and since the heat of that day has been much over, may be apt to account this testimony a small thing to suffer so much upon, as some have done, not only to beating, but to fines, and long and hard imprisonments, yet in those times, they who were faithfully exercised under it, dared not despise the day of small things; as knowing that he who would do so, would not be thought worthy to be concerned in higher testimonies.

I had now lost one of my hats, and I had but one more. That therefore I put on, but did not keep it long; for the next time my father saw it on my head, he tore it violently from me, and laid it up with the other, I knew not where. Wherefore I put on my moutier-cap, which was all I had left to wear on my head, and it was but a very little while that I had that to wear; for as soon as my father came where I was, I lost that also. And now I was forced to go bare-headed wherever I had occasion to go, within doors and without.

This was in the eleventh month, called January, and the weather sharp; so that I, who had been bred up

more tenderly, took so great a cold in my head, that my face and head were much swelled; and my gums had on them boils so sore, that I could neither chew meat, nor without difficulty swallow liquids. It held long, and I underwent much pain, without much pity, except from my poor sister, who did what she could to give me ease; and at length, by frequent applications of figs and stoned raisins toasted, and laid to the boils as hot as I could bear them, they ripened fit for lancing, and soon after sunk; then I had ease.

I was laid up, as a kind of prisoner, for the rest of this winter, having no means to go forth among Friends, nor they liberty to come to me. Wherefore I spent the time much in my chamber, in waiting on the Lord, and in reading, mostly in the Bible. But whenever I had occasion to speak to my father, though I had no hat now to offend him, yet my language did as much; for I dared not say you to him; but thou, or thee, as the occasion required, and then would he be sure to fall on me with his fists.

At one of these times, I remember, when he had beaten me in that manner, he commanded me, as he commonly did at such times, to go to my chamber; which I did, and he followed me to the bottom of the stairs. Being come there, he gave me a parting blow, and in a very angry tone said, 'Sirrah, if ever I hear you say thou or thee to me again, I'll strike your teeth down your throat.' I was greatly grieved to hear him say so; and feeling a word rise in my heart, I turned again and calmly said to him. Would it not be just, if God should serve thee so, when thou say thou or thee to him? Though his hand was up, I saw it sink and his countenance fall, and he turned away and left me standing there. But notwithstanding, I went up into my chamber, and cried unto the Lord, earnestly beseeching him, that he would be pleased to open my father's eyes, that he might see whom he fought against, and for what; and that he would turn his heart.

After this I had a time of rest and quiet from these disturbances; my father not saying any thing to me, nor giving me occasion to say any thing to him. But I was still under a kind of confinement, unless I would have run about the country bare-headed like a madman; which I did not see it was my place to do. I found that although to be abroad and at liberty among my friends, would have been more pleasant to me; yet home was at present my proper place, a school in which I was to learn with patience to bear the cross, and I willingly submitted to it.

But after some time a fresh storm, more fierce and sharp than any before, arose and fell upon me; the occasion whereof was this; my father, having been in his younger years, more especially while he lived in London, a constant hearer of those who are called puritan preachers, had stored up a pretty significant stock of Scripture knowledge, and sometimes, though not constantly nor very often, caused his family to come together on a first-day in the evening, and expounded a chapter to them, and prayed. His family now, as well as his estate, was lessened; for my mother was dead, my brother gone, and my eldest sister at London; and having put off his husbandry, he had put off with it most of his servants, so that he had now but one man and one maid servant. It so fell out, that on a first-day night he bid my sister, who sat with him in the parlour, call in the servants to prayer.

Whether this was done as a trial upon me, I know not; but a trial it proved to me: for they, loving me

very well, and disliking my father's carriage to me, made no haste to go in, but staid a second summons. This so offended him, that when at length they did go in, he instead of going to prayer examined them, why they came not in when they were first called? And the answer they gave him being such as rather heightened, than abated his displeasure, he, with an angry tone said, 'call in that fellow,' meaning me, who was left alone in the kitchen, 'for he is the cause of all this.' As they were backward to go in themselves, so they were not forward to call me in, fearing the effect of my father's displeasure would fall upon me, as it soon did; for hearing what was said, and not staying for the call, I went in of myself. And as soon as I was come in, my father discharged his displeasure on me, in very sharp and bitter expressions; which drew from me in the grief of my heart, to see him so transported with passion, these few words; "They that can pray with such a spirit let them; for my part I cannot." With that my father flew upon me with both his fists, and not thinking that sufficient, stepped hastily to the place where his cane stood, and catching that up, laid on me, I thought, with all his strength. And, being bare-headed, I thought his blows must needs have broken my skull, had I not laid my arm over my head to defend it.

His man seeing this, and not able to contain himself, stept between us, and laying hold on the cane, by strength of hand held it so fast, that though he attempted not to take it away, yet he withheld my father from striking with it; which did but enrage him the more. I disliked this in the man, and bid him let go the cane, and begone; which he immediately did, and turning to be gone, had a blow on the shoulders for his pains, which yet did not much hurt him.

But now my sister, fearing lest my father should fall upon me again, besought him to forbear; adding, "Indeed sir, if you strike him any more, I will throw open the casement and cry murder; for I am afraid you will kill my brother." This stopped his hand; and after some threatening speeches, he commanded me to get to my chamber, which I did; as I always did whenever he bid me. There, soon after, my sister followed me to see my arm and dress it, for it was indeed very much bruised and swelled between the wrist and elbow; and in some places the skin was broken and beaten off. But though it was very sore, and I felt for some time much pain in it, yet I had peace and quietness in my mind, being more grieved for my father than for myself, who I knew had hurt himself more than me.

This was, so far as I remember, the last time that ever my father called his family to prayer. And this was also the last time that he ever fell, so severely at least, upon me. Soon after this, my eldest sister, who in all the time of these exercises of mine, had been at London, returned home; much troubled to find me a Quaker, a name of reproach and great contempt then; and she, being at London, had received, I suppose, the worst character of them. Yet, though she disliked the people, her affectionate regard to me, made her rather pity than despise me; and the more, when she understood what hard usage I had met with.

The rest of this winter I spent in a lonesome solitary life, having none to converse with, none to unbosom myself to, none to ask counsel of, none to seek relief from, but the Lord alone; who yet was more than all. And yet the company and society of faithful and judicious friends, would, I thought, have

been very welcome, as well as helpful to me in my spiritual travel; in which I thought I made but a slow progress—my soul breathing after further attainments; the sense of which drew from me the following lines.

*The winter tree
Resembles me,
Whose sap lies in its root:
The spring draws nigh;
As it, so I
Shall bud, I hope, and shoot.*

At length it pleased the Lord to move Isaac Penington and his wife to make a visit to my father, and see how it fared with me: and very welcome they were to me, whatever they were to him; to whom I doubt not but they would have been more welcome, had it not been for me. They tarried with us all night, and much discourse they had with my father both about the principles of Truth in general, and me in particular; which I was not privy to. But one thing, I remember I afterwards heard of, which was this: When my father and we were at their house some months before, Mary Penington, in some discourse between them, had told him how hardly her husband's father, alderman Penington, had dealt with him about his hat; which my father, little then thinking that it would, and so soon too, be his own case, did very much censure the alderman for; wondering that so wise a man as he was, should take notice of such a trivial thing as the putting off, or keeping on a hat; and he spared not to blame him liberally for it.

This gave her a handle to take hold of him by. And having had an ancient acquaintance with him, and he having always had a high opinion of and respect for her; she, who was a woman of great wisdom, of ready speech, and of a well resolved spirit, did press so closely upon him with this home-argument, that he was utterly at a loss how to defend himself.

After dinner next day, when they were ready to take coach to return home, she desired my father, that, since my company was so little acceptable to him, he would give me leave to go and spend some time with them, where I should be sure to be welcome. He was very unwilling I should go, and made many objections against it; all which she answered and removed so clearly, that not finding what excuse further to allege, he at length left it to me; and I soon turned the scale for going.

We were come to the coach-side before this was concluded on, and I was ready to step in; when one of my sisters privately put my father in mind, that I had never a hat on. That somewhat startled him; for he did not think it fit I should go from home, and that so far, and to stay abroad without a hat. Wherefore he whispered to her to fetch me a hat, and he entertained them with some discourse in the meantime. But as soon as he saw the hat coming, he would not stay till it came, lest I should put it on before him; but breaking off his discourse abruptly, took his leave of them, and hastened in before the hat was brought to me.

I had not one penny of money about me, nor any, indeed, elsewhere. For my father, so soon as he saw

that I would be a Quaker, took from me both what money I had, and every thing else of value, or that would have made money, as some plate buttons, rings, etc., pretending that he would keep them for me, till I came to myself again, lest in the mean time I should destroy them. But as I had no money, so being among my friends, I had no need of any, nor ever longed after it; though once upon a particular occasion I had like to have wanted it. The case was thus:

I had been at Reading, and set out from there on the first-day of the week in the morning, intending to reach, as in point of time I well might, to Isaac Penington's, where the meeting was to be that day; but when I came to Maidenhead, a thorough-fair town on the way, I was stopped by the watch for riding on that day. The watchman laying hold on the bridle, told me I must go with him to the constable; and accordingly, making no resistance, I allowed him to lead my horse to the constable's door. When we were come there, the constable told me I must go before the warden, who was the chief officer of that town, and bid the watchman bring me on, himself walking before.

Being come to the warden's door, the constable knocked, and desired to speak with Mr. Warden. He thereupon quickly coming to the door, the constable said, 'Sir, I have brought a man here to you, whom the watch took riding through the town.' The warden was a budge old man; and I looked somewhat big too, having a good gelding under me, and a good riding coat on my back, with both which my friend Isaac Penington had kindly accommodated me for that journey.

The warden therefore taking me to be, as the saying is, somebody, put off his hat and made a low congee to me; but when he saw that I sat still, and neither bowed to him, nor moved my hat, he gave a start, and said to the constable, 'You said you had brought a man, but he don't behave himself like a man.' I sat still upon my horse, and said not a word, but kept my mind retired to the Lord, waiting to see what this would come to. The warden then began to examine me, asking me from where I came, and where I was going? I told him I came from Reading, and was going to Chalfont. He asked me why I travelled on that day? I told him I did not know that it would give any offence barely to ride or walk on that day, so long as I did not carry or drive any carriage, or horses laden with burdens. 'Why,' said he, 'if your business was urgent, did you not take a pass from the mayor of Reading? Because, replied I, I did not know, or think I should have needed one. 'Well,' said he, 'I will not talk with you now, because it is time to go to church; but I will examine you further anon. And turning to the constable, 'Have him,' said he, 'to an inn, and bring him before me after dinner.'

The naming of an inn put me in mind that such public houses were places of expense, and I knew I had no money to defray it. Wherefore, I said to the warden, before you send me to an inn, which may occasion some expense, I think it needful to acquaint you, that I have no money.

At that the warden startled again; and turning quick upon me, said, 'How! no money! How can that be? You don't look like a man that has no money.' However I look, said I, I tell you the truth, that I have no money; and I tell it to forewarn you, that you may not bring any charge upon the town. 'I wonder,' said he, 'what are you have got, that you can travel without money; you can do more, I assure you, than I can.' I making no answer, he went on and said, 'Well, well! but if you have no money, you have a good

horse under you, and we can distraint him for the charge.' But, said I, the horse is not mine. 'No!' said he, 'but you have a good coat on your back, and that, I hope, is your own.' No, said I, but it is not; for I borrowed both the horse and the coat. With that the warden holding up his hands and smiling, said, 'Bless me! I never met with such a man as you are before! What! were you set out by the parish? Then turning to the constable he said, 'Have him to the Greyhound, and bid the people be civil to him.' Accordingly to the Greyhound I was led, my horse set up, and I put into a large room, and some account, I suppose, given of me to the people of the house.

This was new work to me, and what the issue of it would be I could not foresee; but being left there alone, I sat down and retired in spirit to the Lord, in whom alone my strength and safety was, and begged support of him; even that he would be pleased to give me wisdom and words to answer the warden, when I should come to be examined again before him.

After some time, having pen, ink and paper about me, I set myself to write what I thought might be proper, if occasion served, to give the warden. And while I was writing the master of the house being come home from his worship, sent the tapster to me, to invite me to dine with him. I bid him tell his master, that I had not any money to pay for my dinner. He sent the man again to tell me, I should be welcome to dine with him, though I had no money. I desired him to tell his master, that I was very sensible of his civility and kindness, in so courteously inviting me to his table; but I had not freedom to eat of his meat, unless I could have paid for it. So he went on with his dinner, and I with my writing.

But before I had finished what was on my mind to write, the constable came again, bringing with him his fellow constable. This was a brisk, genteel young man, a shopkeeper in the town, whose name was Cherry. They saluted me civilly, and told me they were come to have me before the warden. This put an end to my writing, which I put into my pocket and went along with them. Being come to the warden's, he asked me again the same questions he had asked me before—to which I gave him the like answers. Then he told me the penalty I had incurred; which, he said, was either to pay so much money, or lie so many hours in the stocks—and asked me which I would choose? I replied, I shall not choose either. And said I, I have told you already that I have no money, though if I had, I could not so far acknowledge myself an offender as to pay any. But as to lying in the stocks, I am in your power, to do unto me what it shall please the Lord to permit you.

When he heard that he paused a while, and then told me, he considered that I was but a young man, and might not, perhaps, understand the danger I had brought myself into, and therefore he would not use the severity of the law upon me; but in hopes that I would be wiser hereafter, he would pass by this offence and discharge me.

Then putting on a countenance of the greatest gravity, he said to me; 'But, young man, I would have you know, that you have not only broken the law of the land, but the law of God also; and therefore you ought to ask him forgiveness, for you have highly offended him.' That, said I, I would most willingly do, if I were sensible that, in this case, I had offended him by breaking any law of his. 'Why,' said he, 'do you question that? Yes, truly, said I; for I do not know that any law of God does forbid me to ride on

this day. 'No!' said he, 'that's strange! Where, I wonder, were you bred? You can read; can't you? Yes, said I, that I can. 'Don't you read then,' said he, 'the commandment; "Remember the sabbath-day to keep it holy. Six days shall you labour, and do all your work; but the seventh-day is the sabbath of the Lord your God; in it you shall not do any work."' 'Yes, replied I, I have both read it often, and remember it very well. But that command was given to the Jews, not to Christians and this is not that day, for that was the seventh-day, but this is the first. 'How!' said he, 'do you know the days of the week no better? you had need then be better taught.' Here the younger constable, whose name was Cherry, interposing, said, 'Mr. Warden, the gentleman is in the right as to that; for this is the first-day of the week, and not the seventh.'

This the old warden took in dudgeon; and looking severely on the constable, said, 'What! do you take upon you to teach me! I'll have you know I will not be taught by you. 'As you please for that sir,' said the constable, 'but I am sure you are mistaken in this point—for Saturday, I know, is the seventh-day, and you know yesterday was Saturday.'

This made the warden hot and testy, and put him almost out of all patience, so that I feared it would have come to a downright quarrel between them—for both were confident, and neither would yield. And so earnestly were they engaged in the contest, that there was no room for me to put in a word between them.

At length the old man, having talked himself out of wind, stood still a while as it were to take breath, and then bethinking himself of me, he turned to me and said, 'You are discharged, and may take your liberty to go about your occasions.' But, said I, I desire my horse may be discharged too, else I know not how to go. 'Ay, ay,' said he, 'you shall have your horse; and turning to the other constable who had not offended him, he said, 'Go see that his horse be delivered to him.'

Thereupon, away I went with that constable, leaving the old warden and the young constable to compose their difference as they could. Being come to the inn, the constable called for my horse to be brought out. Which done, I immediately mounted and began to set forward. But the hostler, not knowing the condition of my pocket, said modestly to me, 'Sir, don't you forget to pay for your horse's standing? No truly, said I, I don't forget it, but I have no money to pay it with, and so I told the warden before. 'Well, hold your tongue,' said the constable to the hostler, 'I'll see you paid.' Then opening the gate they let me out, the constable wishing me a good journey, and through the town I rode without further molestation; though it was as much sabbath, I thought, when I went out, as it was when I came in.

A secret joy arose in me as I rode on the way, that I had been preserved from doing or saying any thing, which might give the adversaries of Truth advantage against it or the friends of it; and praises sprang in my thankful heart to the Lord my preserver. It added also not a little to my joy that I felt the Lord near to me, by his witness in my heart, to check and warn me; and my spirit was so far subjected to him, as readily to take warning, and to stop at his check; an instance of both which I had that very morning. For as I rode between Reading and Maidenhead, I saw lying in my way the scabbard of a hanger, which,

having lost its hook, had slipped off, I suppose, and dropped from the side of the wearer; and it had in it a pair of knives, whose hafts being inlaid with silver seemed to be of some value. I alighted and took it up, and clapping it between my thigh and the saddle, rode on a little way; but I quickly found it too heavy for me, and the reprovor in me soon began to check. The word arose in me, 'What have you to do with that? Does it belong to you?' I felt I had done amiss in taking it; wherefore, I turned back to the place where it lay, and laid it down where I found it. And when afterwards I was stopped and seized on at Maidenhead, I saw there was a providence in not bringing it with me; which, if it should have been found, as it needs must, under my coat when I came to be unhorsed, might have raised some evil suspicion or sinister thoughts concerning me.

The stop I met with at Maidenhead had spent so much time, that when I came to Isaac Penington's, the meeting there was half over, which gave them occasion, after meeting, to inquire of me if any thing had befallen me on the way, which had caused me to come so late. Whereupon I related to them what exercise I had met with, and how the Lord had helped me through it; which when they had heard they rejoiced with me, and for my sake.

Great was the love and manifold the kindnesses which I received from these my worthy friends, Isaac and Mary Penington, while I abode in their family; they were indeed as affectionate parents and tender nurses to me, in this time of my religious childhood. For besides their weighty and seasonable counsels, and exemplary conducts, they furnished me with means to go to the other meetings of Friends in that county, when the meeting was not in their own house. And, indeed, the time I staid with them was so well spent, that it not only yielded great satisfaction to my mind, but turned, in good measure, to my spiritual advantage in the Truth.

But that I might not, on the one hand, bear too hard upon my friends; nor on the other hand forget the house of thralldom—after I had staid with them some six or seven weeks, from the time called Easter to the time called Whitsuntide, I took my leave of them to depart home, intending to walk to Wiccomb in one day, and from there home in another.

That day that I came home I did not see my father, nor until noon the next day, when I went into the parlour where he was, to take my usual place at dinner. As soon as I came in, I observed by my father's countenance, that my hat was still an offence to him; but when I was sat down, and before I had eaten any thing, he made me understand it more fitly, by saying to me, but in a milder tone than he had formerly used to speak to me in, 'If you cannot content yourself to come to dinner without your hive on your head, (so he called my hat) pray rise, and go take your dinner somewhere else.'

Upon these words I arose from the table, and leaving the room, went into the kitchen, where I staid till the servants went to dinner, and then sat down very contentedly with them. Yet I suppose my father might intend that I should have gone into some other room, and there have eaten by myself. But I chose rather to eat with the servants; and did so from that point on, so long as he and I lived together. And from this time he rather chose, as I thought, to avoid seeing me, than to renew the quarrel about my hat.

My sisters, meanwhile observing my wariness in words and behaviour, and being satisfied, I suppose, that I acted upon a principle of religion and conscience, carried themselves very kindly to me, and did what they could to mitigate my father's displeasure against me. So that I now enjoyed much more quiet at home, and took more liberty to go abroad amongst my friends, than I had done, or could do before; and having informed myself where any meetings of Friends were holden, within a reasonable distance from me, I resorted to them.

At first I went to a town called Haddenham, in Buckinghamshire, five miles from my father's, where, at the house of one Belson, a few who were called Quakers did meet sometimes on a first-day of the week; but I found little satisfaction there. Afterwards, upon further inquiry, I understood there was a settled meeting at a little village called Meadle, about four long miles from me, in the house of one John White, which is continued there still; and to that from that point forward I constantly went, while I abode in that country and was able. Many a sore day's travel have I had there and back again; being commonly in the winter time, how fair soever the weather was overhead, wet up to the ankles at least; yet through the goodness of the Lord to me I was preserved in health.

A little meeting also there was, on the fourth-day of the week, at a town called Bledlow, two miles from me, in the house of one Thomas Saunders, who professed the Truth; but his wife, whose name was Damaris, did possess it, being a woman of great sincerity and lively sense, and to that meeting also I usually went.

But though I took this liberty for the service of God, that I might worship him in the assemblies of His people, yet did I not use it upon other occasions; but spent my time on other days for the most part in my chamber, in retiredness of mind, waiting on the Lord. And the Lord was graciously pleased to visit me by his quickening spirit and life, so that I came to feel the operation of his power in my heart, working out that which was contrary to his will, and giving me, in measure, dominion over it.

As my spirit was kept in due subjection to this divine power, I grew into a nearer acquaintance with the Lord; and he vouchsafed to speak to me in the inward of my soul, and to open my understanding in his fear, to receive counsel from him; so that I not only at some times heard his voice, but could distinguish it from the voice of the enemy.

As thus I daily waited on the Lord, a weighty and unusual exercise came upon me, which bowed my spirit very low before the Lord. I had seen, in the light of the Lord, the horrible guilt of those deceitful priests of several sorts and denominations, who made a trade of preaching, and for filthy profit-sake held the people always learning; yet so taught them, as that, by their teaching and ministry, they were never able to come to the knowledge, much less to the acknowledgment of the truth; for as they themselves hated the light, because their own deeds were evil, so by reviling, reproaching and blaspheming the true light, wherewith every man that comes into the world is enlightened, John 1:9., they begat in the people a disesteem of the light; and laboured, as much as in them lay, to keep their hearers in darkness, that they might not be turned to the light in themselves, lest by the light they should discover the wickedness of these their deceitful teachers, and turn from them.

Against this practice of these false teachers, the zeal of the Lord had flamed in my breast for some time; and now the burden of the word of the Lord against them, fell heavy upon me, with command to proclaim his controversy against them.

Happily would I have been excused from this service, which I judged too heavy for me; wherefore, I besought the 'Lord to take this weight from off me, who was in every respect but young, and lay it upon some other of his servants, of whom he had many, who were much more able and fit for it. But the Lord would not be entreated, but continued the burden upon me with greater weight; requiring obedience from me, and promising to assist me therein. Whereupon I arose from my bed, and in the fear and dread of the Lord, committed to writing what he, in the motion of his divine Spirit, dictated to me to write. When I had done it, though the sharpness of the message therein delivered was hard to my nature to be the publisher of; yet I found acceptance with the Lord in my obedience to his will, and his peace filled my heart. As soon as I could, I communicated to my friends what I had written; and it was printed in the year 1660, in one sheet of paper, under the title of "An alarm to the Priests; or a message from Heaven to forewarn them, etc."

Some time after the publishing of this paper, having occasion to go to London, I went to visit George Fox the younger, who with another Friend, was then a prisoner in a messenger's hands. I had never seen him, nor he me before; yet this paper lying on the table before him, he pointing to it, asked me if I was the person that wrote it. I told him I was. 'It is much,' said the other Friend, 'that they bear it.' 'It is,' replied he, 'their portion—and they must bear it.'

While I was then in London, I went to a little meeting of Friends, which was then held in the house of one Humphrey Bache, a goldsmith, at the sign of the snail in Tower street. It was then a very troublesome time, not from the government, but from the rabble of boys and rude people, who upon the turn of the times, at the return of the king, took liberty to be very abusive.

When the meeting ended, a good number of these unruly folk were got together at the door, ready to receive the Friends as they came forth, not only with evil words, but with blows; which I saw they bestowed freely on some of them who were gone out before me, and I expected I should have my share when I came amongst them. But quite contrary to my expectation,—when I came out, they said one to another, 'Let him alone; don't meddle with him; he is no Quaker, I'll warrant you.'

This struck me, and was worse to me than if they had laid their fists on me, as they did on others. I was troubled to think what the matter was, or what these rude people saw in me, that made them not take me for a Quaker. And upon a close examination of myself, with respect to my habit and deportment, I could not find any thing to place it on, but that I had then on my head a large mountier-cap of black velvet, the skirt of which being turned up in folds, looked, it seems, somewhat above the then common garb of a Quaker; and this put me out of conceit with my cap.

I came at this time to London from Isaac Penington's, and there I went again in my way home; and while I staid there, amongst other Friends who came there, Thomas Loe of Oxford was one. A faithful

and diligent labourer he was in the work of the Lord, and an excellent ministerial gift he had. In my zeal for truth, being very desirous that my neighbours might have the opportunity of hearing the gospel, the glad tidings of salvation, livingly and powerfully preached among them, I entered into communication with him about it; offering to procure some convenient place in the town where I lived, for a meeting to be held, and to invite my neighbours to it, if he could give me any ground to expect his company at it. He told me, he was not at his own command, but at the Lord's; and he knew not how he might dispose of him; but wished me, if I found when I was come home, that the thing continued with weight upon my mind, and that I could get a fit place for a meeting, I would advertise him of it by a few lines, directed to him in Oxford, where he was then going, and he might then let me know how his freedom stood in that matter.

When, therefore, I was come home, and had treated with a neighbour for a place to have a meeting in, I wrote to my friend Thomas Loe, to acquaint him that I had procured a place for a meeting, and would invite company to it, if he would fix the time and give me some ground to hope that he would be at it.

This letter I sent by a neighbour to Thame, to be given to a dyer of Oxford, who constantly kept Thame market, with whom I was pretty well acquainted, having sometimes formerly used him, not only in his way of trade, but to carry letters between my brother and me, when he was a student in that university, for which he was always paid; and had been so careful in the delivery, that our letters had always gone safe until now. But this time, Providence so ordering, or at least for my trial permitting it, this letter of mine, instead of being delivered according to its direction, was seized and carried, as I was told, to the lord Faulkland, who was then called lord lieutenant of that county.

The occasion of this stopping of letters at that time, was that mad prank of those infatuated 'fifth-monarchy-men,' who from their meeting-house in Coleman street, London, breaking forth in arms, under the command of their chieftain Venner, made an insurrection in the city, on pretence of setting up the kingdom of Jesus; who it is said, they expected would come down from heaven to be their leader. So little understood they the nature of his kingdom; though he himself had declared, "it was not of this world."

The king, (Charles II.) a little before his arrival in England, had, by his declaration from Breda, given assurance of liberty to tender consciences; and that no man should be disquieted, or called in question for difference of opinion in matters of religion, who did not disturb the peace of the kingdom. Upon this assurance dissenters of all sorts relied, and held themselves secure. But now, by this frantic action of a few hot-brained men, the king was, by some, holden discharged from this his royal word and promise, in his foregoing declaration publicly given. And hereupon letters were intercepted and broken open, for the discovery of suspected plots and designs against the government; and not only dissenters' meetings, of all sorts without distinction were disturbed, but very many were imprisoned in most parts throughout the nation, and great search there was, in all counties, for suspected persons, who, if not found at meetings, were fetched in from their own houses.

The lord-lieutenant, so called, of Oxfordshire, had on this occasion taken Thomas Loe, and many other

of our Friends, at a meeting and sent them prisoners to Oxford castle, just before my letter was brought to his hand, wherein I had invited Thomas Loe to a meeting; and he putting the worst construction upon it, as if I, a poor simple lad, had intended a seditious meeting, in order to raise rebellion, ordered two of the deputy-lieutenants who lived nearest to me, to send a party of horse to fetch me in.

Accordingly, while I, wholly ignorant of what had passed at Oxford, was in daily expectation of an agreeable answer to my letter, came a party of horse one morning to my father's gate, and asked for me.

It so fell out, that my father was at that time from home, I think in London; whereupon he that commanded the party alighted, and came in. My eldest sister, hearing the noise of soldiers, came hastily up into my chamber, and told me there were soldiers below who inquired for me. I forthwith went down to them, and found the commander was a barber of Thame, and one who had always been my barber till I was a Quaker. His name was Whatley, a bold brisk fellow.

I asked him what his business was with me. He told me I must go with him. I demanded to see his warrant. He laid his hand on his sword and said that was his warrant. I told him, though that was not a legal warrant, yet I would not dispute it—but was ready to bear injuries. He told me he could not help it; he was commanded to bring me forthwith before the deputy-lieutenants; and therefore desired me to order a horse to be got ready, because he was in haste. I let him know I had no horse of my own, and would not meddle with any of my father's horses, in his absence especially; and that therefore, if he would have me with him, he must carry me as he could.

He thereupon taking my sister aside, told her he found I was resolute, and his orders were peremptory; wherefore he desired that she would give order for a horse to be made ready for me; for otherwise he should be forced to mount me behind a trooper, which would be very unsuitable for me, and which he was very unwilling to do. She thereupon ordered a horse to be got ready, upon which, when I had taken leave of my sisters, I mounted and went off, not knowing where he intended to carry me.

He had orders, it seems to take some others also in a neighbouring village, whose names he had, but their houses he did not know. Wherefore, as we rode, he asked me, if I knew such and such men, whom he named, and where they lived; and when he understood that I knew them, he desired me to show him their houses. No, said I, I scorn to be an informer against my neighbours, to bring them into trouble. He thereupon riding to and fro, found by inquiry most of their houses; but, as it happened, found none of them at home, at which I was glad.

At length he brought me to the house of one called Esquire Clark, of Weston by Thame, who being afterwards knighted, was called Sir John Clark; a jolly man, too much addicted to drinking in soberer times, but was now grown more licentious that way, as the times did now more favour debauchery. He and I had known one another for some years, though not very intimately, having met sometimes at the lord Wenman's table.

This Clark was one of the deputy-lieutenants, whom I was to be brought before. And he had got another

to join with him in tendering me the oaths, whom I knew only by name and character; he was called Esquire Knowls of Grays, by Henley, and reputed a man of better morals than the other.

I was brought into the hall, and kept there. And as Quakers were not so common then, as they now are, and indeed even yet, the more is the pity, they are not common in that part of the country—I was made a spectacle and gazing-stock to the family, and by several I was diversely set upon. Some spake to me courteously, with appearance of compassion; others ruggedly, with evident tokens of wrath and scorn. But though I gave them the hearing of what they said, which I could not well avoid, yet I said little to them; but keeping my mind as well retired as I could, I breathed to the Lord for help and strength from him, to bear me up and carry me through this trial, that I might not sink under it, or be prevailed on by any means, fair or foul, to do any thing that might dishonour or displease my God.

At length came forth the justices themselves, for so they were, as well as lieutenants; and after they had saluted me, they discoursed with me pretty familiarly. And though Clark would sometimes be a little jocular and waggish, which was somewhat natural to him, yet Knowls treated me very civilly, not seeming to take any offence at my not standing bare before him. And when a young priest, who, as I understood, was chaplain in the family, took upon him pragmatically to reprove me for standing with my hat on before the magistrates, and snatched my cap from off my head, Knowls in a pleasant manner corrected him, telling him he mistook himself, in taking a cap for a hat, for mine was a mountier-cap, and bid him give it me again; which he, though unwillingly doing, I forthwith put it on my head again, and from that point forward none meddled with me about it.

Then they began to examine me, putting many questions to me relating to the present disturbances in the nation, occasioned by the late foolish insurrection of those frantic fifth-monarchy-men. To all which I readily answered, according to the simplicity of my heart and innocency of my hands; for I had neither done nor thought any evil against the government.

But they endeavoured to affright me with threats of danger; telling me that for all my pretence of innocency, there was high matter against me, which if I would stand out, would be brought forth, and that from under my own hand. I knew not what they meant by this; but I knew my innocency, and kept to it.

At length when they saw I regarded not their threats in general, they asked me if I knew one Thomas Loe, and had written of late to him. I then remembered my letter, which till then I had not thought of, and thereupon frankly told them, that I did both know Thomas Loe, and had lately written to him; but that as I knew I had written no hurt, so I did not fear any danger from that letter. They shook their heads and said it was dangerous to write letters to appoint meetings in such troublesome times.

They added, that by appointing a meeting, and endeavouring to gather a concourse of people together, in such a juncture especially as this was, I had rendered myself a dangerous person. And therefore, they could do no less than tender me the oaths of allegiance and supremacy; which therefore they required me to take.

I told them, if I could take any oath at all, I would take the oath of allegiance; for I owed allegiance to the king. But I dared not take any oath, because my Lord and master Jesus Christ, had commanded me not to swear at all; and if I break his command, I should thereby both dishonour and displease him.

Hereupon they undertook to reason with me, and used many words to persuade me that that command of Christ related only to common and profane swearing—not to swearing before a magistrate. I heard them and saw the weakness of their arguings, but did not return them any answer; for I found my present business was not to dispute, but to suffer; and that it was not safe for me, in this my weak and childish state especially, to enter into reasonings with sharp, quick, witty and learned men, lest I might thereby hurt both the cause of Truth, which I was to bear witness to, and myself. Therefore I chose rather to be a fool, and let them triumph over me, than by my weakness give them advantage to triumph over the Truth. And my spirit being closely exercised in a deep travail towards the Lord, I earnestly begged of him, that he would be pleased to keep me faithful to the testimony he had committed to me, and not permit me to be taken in any of the snares which the enemy laid for me. And, blessed be his holy name, he heard my cries, and preserved me out of them.

When the justices saw they could not bow me to their wills, they told me they must send me to prison. I told them I was contented to suffer whatsoever the Lord should permit them to inflict upon me. Whereupon they withdrew into the parlour, to consult together what to do with me; leaving me meanwhile to be gazed on in the hall.

After a pretty long stay, they came forth to me again with a great show of kindness, telling me they were very unwilling to send me to jail, but would be as favourable to me as possibly they could; and that, if I would take the oaths, they would pass by all the other matter which they had against me. I told them, I knew they could not justly have any thing against me, for I had neither done, nor intended any thing against the government, or against them. And as to the oaths, I assured them, that my refusing them was merely matter of conscience to me, and that I dared not take any oath whatsoever, if it were to save my life.

When they heard this they left me again, and went and signed a mittimus to send me to prison at Oxford, and charged one of the troopers that brought me there, who was one of the newly-raised militia troops, to convey me safely to Oxford. But before we departed they called the trooper aside and gave him private instructions what he should do with me; which I knew nothing of till I came there, but expected I should go directly to the castle.

It was almost dark when we took horse, and we had about nine or ten miles to ride; the weather was thick and cold, for it was about the beginning of the twelfth month, and I had no boots, being snatched away from home on a sudden; which made me not care to ride very fast. My guard, who was a tradesman in Thame, having confidence in me, that I would not give him the slip, jogged on without heeding how I followed him. When I was gone about a mile on the way, I overtook my father's man, who without my knowledge, had followed me at a distance to Weston, and waited there abroad in the stables, till he understood by some of the servants, that I was to go to Oxford; and then ran before,

resolving not to leave me till he saw what they would do with me.

I would have had him return home, but he desired me not to send him back, but let him run on till I came to Oxford. I considered that it was a token of the fellow's affectionate kindness to me, and that possibly I might send my horse home by him; and thereupon stopping my horse, I bid him, if he would go on, get up behind me. He modestly refused, telling me he could run as fast as I rode. But when I told him, if he would not ride he should not go forward, rather than leave me, he leaped up behind me, and on we went.

He was not willing I should have gone at all. He had a great cudgel in his hand, and a strong arm to use it; and being a stout fellow, he had a great mind to fight the trooper and rescue me. Wherefore he desired me to turn my horse and ride off. And if the trooper offered to pursue, leave him to deal with him.

I checked him sharply for that, and charged him to be quiet, and not think hardly of the poor trooper, who could do no other than he did; and who, though he had an ill journey in going with me, carried himself civilly to me. I told him also, that I had no need to fly, for I had done nothing that would bring guilt or fear upon me, neither did I go with an ill will; and this quieted the man. So on we went; but were so far cast behind the trooper, that we had lost both sight and hearing of him, and I was eager to mend my pace to get up to him again.

We came pretty late into Oxford on the seventh-day of the week, which was the market-day; and contrary to my expectation, which was to have been carried to the castle, my trooper stopped in the High street, and calling at a shop, asked for the master of the house; who coming to the door, he delivered to him the mittimus, and with it a letter from the deputy-lieutenants, or one of them, which when he had read, he asked where the prisoner was. Whereupon the soldier pointing to me, he desired me to alight and come in; which when I did, he received me civilly.

The trooper being discharged of his prisoner, marched back, and my father's man seeing me settled in better quarters than he expected, mounted my horse and went off with him. I did not presently understand the quality of my keeper; but I found him a genteel, courteous man, by trade a linen-draper; and, as I afterwards understood, he was the city-marshal, and had a command in the county troop, and was a person of good repute in the place; his name was Galloway.

Whether I was committed to him out of regard to my father, that I might not be thrust into a common jail; or out of a politic design, to keep me from the conversation of my friends, in hopes that I might be drawn to abandon this profession, which I had but lately taken up, I do not know. But this I know, that though I lacked no civil treatment or kind accommodations where I was, yet after once I understood that many Friends were prisoners in the castle, and among the rest Thomas Loe, I had much rather have been among them there, with all the inconveniences they underwent, than where I was with the best entertainment. But this was my present lot; and therefore with this I endeavoured to be content.

It was quickly known in the city that a Quaker was brought in prisoner and committed to the marshal. Whereupon, the men Friends generally being prisoners already in the castle, some of the women Friends came to inquire after me and to visit me; as Silas Norton's wife and Thomas Loe's wife, who were sisters, and another woman Friend who lived in the same street where I was, whose husband was not a Quaker, but kindly affected towards them, a baker by trade, and his name as I remember was, Ryland.

By some of these an account was soon given to the Friends in the castle, of my being taken up and brought prisoner to the marshal's. Whereupon it pleased the Lord to move the heart of my dear friend Thomas Loe, to salute me with a very tender and affectionate letter in the following terms:

My beloved friend.

In the Truth and love of the Lord Jesus, by which life and salvation is revealed in the saints, is my dear love to you, and in much tenderness do I salute you. And dear heart, a time of trial God has permitted to come upon us, to try our faith and love to him; and this will work for the good of them who through patience endure to the end. I believe God will be glorified through our sufferings, and his name will be exalted in the patience and long-suffering of his chosen.

When I heard that you were called into this trial, with the servants of the Most High, to give your testimony to the truth of what we have believed, it came into my heart to write to you, and to greet you with the embraces of the power of an endless life; where our faith stands, and unity is felt with the saints for ever. My dear friend, let us live in the pure counsel of the Lord, and dwell in his strength, which gives us power and sufficiency to endure all things for his name's sake; and then our crown and reward will be with the Lord for ever, and the blessings of his heavenly kingdom will be our portion. Oh, dear heart, let us give up all freely into the will of God, that God may be glorified by us, and we comforted together in the Lord Jesus; which is the desire of my soul, who am your dear and loving friend in the eternal truth,

Thomas Loe,

P. S. We are more than forty here, who suffer innocently for the testimony of a good conscience; because we cannot swear, and break Christ's commands. And we are all well, and the blessing and presence of God is with us. Friends here salute you. Farewell. The power and the wisdom of the Lord God be with you, amen.

Greatly was my spirit refreshed, and my heart gladdened, at the reading of this consoling letter from my friend; and my soul blessed the Lord for his love and tender goodness to me, in moving his servant to write thus to me.

But I had cause soon after to double and redouble my thankful acknowledgment to the Lord my God, who put it into the heart of my dear friend Isaac Penington also, to visit me with some encouraging lines from Aylesbury jail, where he was then a prisoner; from which, having heard that I was carried

prisoner to Oxford, he thus saluted me:

Dear Thomas,

Great has been the Lord's goodness to you, in calling you out of that path of vanity and death, wherein you were running towards destruction, to give you a living name and an inheritance of life among his people; which certainly will be the end of your faith in him, and obedience to him. And let it not be a light thing in your eyes, that he now accounts you worthy to suffer among his choice lambs, that he might make your crown weightier, and your inheritance the fuller. O that that eye and heart may be kept open in you, which know the value of these things! And that you may be kept close to the feeling of the life, that you may be fresh in your spirit in the midst of your sufferings, and may reap the benefit of them; finding that pared off thereby, which hinders the bubblings of the everlasting spring, and makes unfit for the breaking forth and enjoyment of the pure power! This is the brief salutation of my dear love to you, which desires your strength and settlement in the power, and the utter weakening of you as to self.

My dear love is to you, with dear Thomas Goodyare, and the rest of imprisoned Friends. I remain yours in truth, to which the Lord my God preserve you single and faithful.

I. Penington.

From Aylesbury jail, the 14th of Twelfth month, 1660.

Though these epistolary visits in the love of God, were very comfortable and confirming to me, and my heart was thankful to the Lord for them; yet I longed after personal conversation with Friends, and it was hard I thought, that there should be so many faithful servants of God so near me, yet I should not be permitted to come at them, to enjoy their company, and reap both the pleasure and benefit of their sweet society.

For although my marshall-keeper was very kind to me, and allowed me the liberty of his house, yet he was not willing I should be seen abroad; the rather perhaps, because he understood I had been pretty well known in that city. Yet once the friendly baker got him to let me step over to his house; and once, and but once, I prevailed with him to let me visit my friends in the castle; but it was with these conditions, that I should not go forth till it was dark; that I would muffle myself up in my cloak; and that I would not stay out late. All which I punctually observed.

When I came there, though there were many Friends prisoners, I scarcely knew one of them by face, except Thomas Loe, whom I had once seen at Isaac Penington's. Nor did any of them know me, though they had generally heard that such a young man as I was convinced of the Truth and come among Friends.

Our salutation to each other was very grave and solemn; nor did we entertain one another with much talk, or with common discourses; but most of the little time I had with them, was spent in a silent retiredness of spirit, waiting upon the Lord. Yet, before we parted, we imparted one to another some of

the exercises we had gone through; and they seeming willing to understand the ground and manner of my commitment, I gave them a brief account thereof, letting Thomas Loe more particularly know that I had directed a letter to him, which having fallen into the hand of the lord-lieutenant, was so far as I could learn, the immediate cause of my being taken up.

Having staid with them as long as my limited time would permit, which I thought was but very short, that I might keep touch with my keeper and come home in due time, I took my leave of my friends there, and with mutual embraces parting, returned to my, in some sense more easy, but in others less easy prison, where after this I staid not long before I was brought back to my father's house. For after my father was come home, who, as I observed before, was from home when I was taken, he applied himself to those justices that had committed me, and not having disoblighed them when he was in office, easily obtained to have me sent home; which between him and them was thus contrived.

There was about this time a general muster and training of the militia forces at Oxford; where, on that occasion, came the lord-lieutenant and the deputy-lieutenants of the county, of which number they who committed me were two.

When they had been a while together, and the marshall with them, he stept suddenly in, and in haste told me I must get ready quickly to go out of town, and that a soldier would come by and by to go with me. This said, he hastened to them again, not giving me any intimation how I was to go, or where.

I needed not much time to get ready in; but I was uneasy in thinking what the Friends of the town would think of this my sudden and private removal; and I feared lest any report should be raised that I had purchased my liberty by an unfaithful compliance. Wherefore, I was in care how to speak with some Friend about it: and that friendly baker, whose wife was a Friend, living on the other side of the street at a little distance, I went out at a back door, intending to step over the way to their house, and return immediately.

It so fell out, that some of the lieutenants, of whom Esquire Clark, who committed me, was one, were standing in a balcony at a great inn or tavern, just over the place where I was to go by; and he spying me, called out to the soldiers who stood thick below in the street, to stop me. They, being generally gentlemen's servants, and many of them knowing me, civilly forbore to lay hold on me, but calling modestly after me, said, 'stay sir, stay; pray come back.' I heard, but was not willing to hear, therefore rather mended my pace, that I might have got within the door. But he calling earnestly after me, and charging them to stop me, some of them were made to run, and laying hold on me before I could open the door, brought me back to my place again.

Being thus disappointed, I took a pen and ink and wrote a few lines, which I sealed up, and gave to the apprentice in the shop, who had carried himself handsomely to me, and desired him to deliver it to that Friend who was their neighbour; which he promised to do.

By the time I had done this, came the soldier that was appointed to conduct me out of town. I knew the

man, for he lived within a mile of me, being through poverty reduced to keep an ale-house; but he had lived in better fashion, having kept an inn at Thame, and by that means knew how to behave himself civilly and did so to me.

He told me he was ordered to wait on me to Whately, and to tarry there at such an inn till Esquire Clark came there, who would then take me home with him in his coach. Accordingly to Whately we walked, which is from Oxford some four or five miles, and long we had not been there, before Clark and a great company of rude men came in.

He alighted and staid a while to eat and drink, though he came but from Oxford, and invited me to eat with him; but I, though I had need enough, refused it, for indeed their conversation was a burden to my life, and made me often think of and pity good Lot.

He seemed at that time to be in a sort of mixed temper, between pleasantness and sourness. He would sometimes joke, which was natural to him, and cast out a jesting flirt at me; but he would rail maliciously against the Quakers. 'If,' said he to me, 'the king would authorize me to do it, I would not leave a Quaker alive in England, except you. I would make no more,' added he, 'to set my pistol to their ears, and shoot them through the head, than I would to kill a dog.' I told him I was sorry he had so ill an opinion of the Quakers, but I was glad he had no cause for it, and I hoped he would be of a better mind.

I had in my hand a little walking stick with a head on it, which he commended, and took out of my hand to look on it, but I saw his intention was to search whether it had a tuck in it, for he tried to draw the head; but when he found it was fast he returned it to me.

He told me I should ride with him to his house in his coach, which was nothing pleasant to me; for I had rather have gone on foot, as bad as the ways were, that I might have been out of his company. Wherefore I took no notice of any kindness in the offer, but only answered, I was at his disposal, not mine own.

When we were ready to go, the marshall came to me and told me, if I pleased I should ride his horse, and he would go in the coach with Mr. Clark. I was glad of the offer, and only told him he should take out his pistols then, for I would not ride with them. He took them out and laid them in the coach by him and away we went.

It was a very fine beast that I was set on, by much the best in the company. But though she was very tall, yet the ways being very foul, I found it needful, as soon as I was out of town, to alight and take up the stirrups. Meanwhile, they driving on, I was so far behind, that being at length missed by the company, a soldier was sent back to look after me.

As soon as I had fitted my stirrups and was remounted, I gave the rein to my mare, which being courageous and nimble, and impatient of delay, made great speed to recover the company. And in a narrow passage, the soldier, who was my barber that had fetched me from home, and I met upon so brisk a gallop, that we had enough to do on either side to take up our horses and avoid a brush.

When we were come to Weston, where Esquire Clark lived, he took the marshall and some others with him into the parlour; but I was left in the hall, to be exposed a second time for the family to gaze on.

At length he himself came out to me, leading in his hand a beloved daughter of his, a young woman of about eighteen years of age, who lacked nothing to have made her beautiful except gravity. An airy piece she was; and very merry she made herself at me.

When they had made themselves as much sport with me as they would, the marshall took his leave of them, and mounting me on a horse of Clark's, had me home to my father's that night.

Next morning before the marshall went away, my father and he consulted together how to entangle me. I felt there were snares laid, but I did not know in what manner or to what end, till the marshall was ready to go. And then, coming where he was to take his leave of me, he desired me to take notice, that although he had brought me home to my father's house again, yet I was not discharged from my imprisonment, but was his prisoner still; and that he had committed me to the care of my father, to see me forth-coming whenever I should be called for. And therefore he expected I should in all things observe my father's orders, and not to go at any time from the house without his leave.

I now plainly saw the snare, and to what end it was laid. I asked him, if this device was not contrived to keep me from going to meetings? He said I must not go to meetings. Whereupon I desired him to take notice, that I would not own myself a prisoner to any man while I continued here. That if he had power to detain me a prisoner, he might take me back again with him if he would, and I should not refuse to go. But I bid him assure himself, that while at home I would take my liberty, both to go to meetings and to visit Friends. He smiled, and said if I would be resolute he could not help it; and so took his leave of me.

By this I perceived that the plot was of my father's laying, to have brought me under such an engagement as should have tied me from going to meetings; and thereupon I expected I should have a new exercise from my father.

It was the constant manner of my father, to have all the keys of the out-doors of his house, which were four, and those linked upon a chain, brought up into his chamber every night, and fetched out from there in the morning; so that none could come in or go out in the night without his knowledge.

I knowing this, suspected that if I got not out before my father came down, I should be stopped from going out at all that day. Wherefore, the passage from my room lying by his chamber door, I went down softly without my shoes, and as soon as the maid had opened the door, I went out, though too early, and walked towards the meeting at Meadle, four long miles off.

I expected to have been talked with about it when I came home, but heard nothing of it, my father resolving to watch me better next time. This I was aware of; and therefore on the next first-day I got up early, went down softly, and hid myself in a back room before the maid was stirring.

When she was up, she went into my father's chamber for the keys; but he bid her leave them till he was up, and he would bring them down himself; which he did, and tarried in the kitchen, through which he expected I would go.

The manner was, that when the common doors were opened, the keys were hung upon a pin in the hall. While therefore my father staid in the kitchen expecting my coming, I stepping gently out of the room where I was, reached the keys, and opening another door, not often used, slipped out and so got away.

I thought I had gone off undiscovered. But whether my father saw me through a window, or by what other means he knew of my going, I know not; but I had gone but a little way, before I saw him coming after me.

The sight of him put me to a stand in my mind, whether I should go on or stop. Had it been in any other case than that of going to a meeting I could not in any wise have gone a step further. But I considered, that the intent of my father's endeavouring to stop me, was to hinder me from obeying the call of my heavenly Father, and to stop me from going to worship him in the assembly of his people; upon this I found it my duty to go on, and observing that my father gained ground upon me, I somewhat mended my pace.

This he observing, mended his pace also, and at length ran. Whereupon I ran also; and a fair course we had through a large meadow of his, which lay behind his house and out of sight of the town. He was not, I suppose, then above fifty years of age, and being light of body and nimble of foot, he held me to it for a while. But afterwards slacking his pace to take breath, and observing that I had gotten ground of him, he turned back and went home; and, as I afterwards understood, told my sisters how I had served him, and said, 'No, if he will take so much pains to go, let him go if he will.' From that time forward he never attempted to stop me, but left me to my liberty, to go when and where I would; yet kept me at the usual distance, avoiding the sight of me as much as he could, as not able to bear the sight of my hat on, nor willing to contend with me again about it.

Nor was it long after this, before I was left not only to myself, but in a manner by myself. For the time appointed for the coronation of the king, which was the 23rd of the second month, called April, drawing on, my father taking my two sisters with him, went up to London some time before, that they might be there in readiness, and put themselves into a condition to see that great solemnity, leaving nobody in the house but myself and a couple of servants. Though this was intended only for a visit on that occasion, yet it proved the breaking up of the family; for he bestowed both his daughters there in marriage, and took lodgings for himself, so that afterwards they never returned to settle at Crowell.

Being now at liberty, I walked over to Aylesbury with some other Friends, to visit my dear friend Isaac Penington, who was still a prisoner there. With him I found dear John Whitehead, and between sixty and seventy more, being well nigh all the men Friends that were then in the county of Bucks; many of them were taken out of their houses by armed men, and sent to prison, as I had been, for refusing to swear. Most of these were thrust into an old room behind the jail, which had anciently been a malt-

house, but was now so decayed, that it was scarcely fit for a doghouse. It lay so open, that the prisoners might have gone out at pleasure. But these were purposely put there, in confidence that they would not go out, that there might be room in the prison for others, of other professions and names, whom the gaoler did not trust there.

While this imprisonment lasted, which was for some months, I went afterwards there sometimes to visit my suffering brethren; and because it was a pretty long way, some eight or nine miles, too far to be walked forward and backward in one day, I sometimes staid a day or two there, and lay in the malt-house among my friends, with whom I delighted to be.

After this imprisonment was over, I went sometimes to Isaac Penington's house at Chalfont, to visit that family and the Friends thereabouts. There was then a meeting, for the most part twice a week in his house; but one first-day in four there was a more general meeting, which was from later called the monthly meeting, to which resorted most of the Friends of other adjacent meetings; and to that I usually went, and sometimes made some stay there.

Here I came acquainted with a Friend of London, whose name was Richard Greenaway, by trade a tailor, a very honest man, and one who had received a gift for the ministry. He having been formerly in other professions of religion, had then been acquainted with one John Ovy of Watlington, in Oxfordshire, a man of some note among the professors there, and understanding, upon inquiry, that I knew him, he had some discourse with me about him. The result of this was, that he, having an intention then shortly to visit some meetings of Friends in this county and the adjoining parts of Oxfordshire and Berkshire, invited me to meet him, upon notice given, and to bear him company in that journey; and in the way bring him to John Ovy's house, with whom I was well acquainted; which I did.

We were kindly received, the man and his wife being very glad to see both their old friend Richard Greenaway and me also, whom they had been very well acquainted with formerly, but had never seen me since I was a Quaker.

Here we tarried that night, and in the evening had a little meeting there with some few of John Ovy's people, amongst whom Richard Greenaway declared the Truth; which they attentively heard and did not oppose, which at that time of day we reckoned was pretty well—for many were apt to bicker.

This visit gave John Ovy an opportunity to inquire of me after Isaac Penington, whose writings, or those which he had written before he came among Friends, he had read and had a great esteem of; and he expressed a desire to see him, that he might have some discourse with him, if he knew how. Whereupon I told him, that if he would take the pains to go to his house, I would bear him company there, introduce him, and engage he should have a kind reception. This pleased him much; and he embracing the offer, I undertook to give him notice of a suitable time; which, after I had gone this little journey with my friend Richard Greenaway, and was returned, I did, making choice of the monthly meeting to go to.

We met by appointment at Stoken-Church, with our staves in our hands like a couple of pilgrims, intending to walk; and having taken some refreshment and rest at Wiccomb, went on cheerfully in the afternoon, entertaining each other with grave religious discourse, which made the walk the easier, and so reached there in good time on the seventh-day of the week.

I gave my friends an account who this person was, whom I had brought to visit them, and the ground of his visit. He had been a professor of religion, from his childhood to his old age, for he was now both grey-headed and elderly, and was a teacher at this time, and had long been so amongst a people, whether Independents or Baptists, I do not well remember. And so well thought of he was, for his zeal and honesty, that in those late professing times he was thrust into the commission of the peace, and thereby lifted up upon the bench; which neither became him, nor he it. For he lacked indeed most of the qualifications requisite for a justice of the peace; an estate to defray the charge of the office, and to bear him up in a course of living above contempt; a competent knowledge in the laws, and a presence of mind or body, or both, to keep offenders in some awe; in all which he was deficient. He was a felt-monger by trade, accustomed to ride upon his pack of skins; and had very little estate, as little knowledge in law, and of but a low presence and appearance to look on. But as my father, I suppose, was the means of getting him put into the commission, so I know he did what he could to countenance him in it, and help him through it at every turn, till that turn came, at the king's return, which turned them both out together.

My friends received me in affectionate kindness, and my companion with courteous civility. The evening was spent in common, but grave conversation; for it was not a proper season for private discourse, both as we were somewhat weary with our walk, and there were other companies of Friends come into the family, to be at the meeting next day. But in the morning I took John Ovy into a private walk, in a pleasant grove near the house, where Isaac Penington came to us; and there, in discourse, both answered all his questions, objections and doubts, and opened to him the principles of Truth, to his admiration and present satisfaction. Which done, we went in to take some refreshment before the meeting began.

Of those Friends who were come over night, in order to be at the meeting, there was Isaac's brother, William Penington, a merchant of London; and with him a Friend, whose name I have forgotten, a grocer of Colchester in Essex; and there was also our friend George Whitehead, whom I had not, that I remember, seen before. The nation had been in a ferment ever since that mad action of the frantic fifth-monarchy men, and was not yet settled; but storms, like thunder showers, flew here and there, so that we could not promise ourselves any safety or quiet in our meetings. And though they had escaped disturbance for some little time before, yet so it fell out, that a party of horse were appointed to come and break up the meeting that day, though we knew nothing of it till we heard and saw them.

The meeting was not fully gathered when they came. But we that were in the family, and many others, were settled in it in great peace and stillness, when on a sudden the prancing of the horses gave notice that lightning was at hand.

We all sat still in our places, except my companion John Ovy, who sat next to me. But he being of a profession that approved Peter's advice to his Lord, to save himself, soon took the alarm; and with the nimbleness of a stripling, cutting a caper over the form that stood before him, ran quickly out at a private door, he had before observed, which led through the parlour into the gardens, and from there into an orchard; where he hid himself in a place so obscure, and withal so convenient for his intelligence by observation of what passed, that one of the family could scarcely have found a likelier.

By that time he was got into his burrow the soldiers came in, being a party of the county troop, commanded by Matthew Archdale of Wiccomb. He behaved himself civilly, and said he was commanded to break up the meeting, and carry the men before a justice of the peace; but he said, he would not take all; and thereupon began to pick and choose, chiefly as his eye guided him, for I suppose he knew very few.

He took Isaac Penington and his brother, George Whitehead and the Friend of Colchester, and me, with three or four more of the country, who belonged to that meeting. He was not fond of the work, and that made him take no more. But he must take some, he said; and bade us provide to go with him before Sir William Boyer of Denham, who was a justice of the peace. Isaac Penington being but weakly, rode; but the rest of us walked there, it being about four miles.

When we came there, the justice carried himself civilly to us all, courteously to Isaac Penington as being a gentleman of his neighbourhood, and there was nothing charged against us, but that we were met together without word or deed. Yet this being contrary to a late proclamation, given forth upon the rising of the fifth-monarchy-men, whereby all dissenters meetings were forbidden, the justice could do no less than take notice of us.

Wherefore he examined all of us whom he did not personally know, asking our names and the places of our respective habitations. But when he had them, and considered from what distant parts of the nation we came, he was amazed. For George Whitehead was of Westmoreland, in the north of England; the grocer was of Essex; I was of Oxfordshire; and William Penington was of London.

Hereupon he told us that our case looked ill, and he was sorry for it. 'For how,' said he, 'can it be imagined that so many could jump altogether at one time and place, from such remote quarters and parts of the kingdom, if it was not by combination and appointment?'

He was answered, that we were so far from coming there by agreement or appointment, that none of us knew of the others coming, and for the most of us, we had never seen one another before; and that therefore he might impute it to chance, or, if he pleased, to Providence.

He urged upon us, that an insurrection had been lately made by armed men, who pretended to be more religious than others: that that insurrection had been plotted and contrived in their meeting-house, where they assembled under colour of worshipping God; that in their meeting-house they hid their arms, and armed themselves, and out of their meeting-house issued forth in arms and killed many; so

that the government could not be safe, unless such meetings were suppressed. We replied, that we hoped he would distinguish and make a difference between the guilty and the innocent; and between those who were principled for fighting, and those who were principled against it; which we were, and had been always known to be so. That our meetings were public, our doors standing open to all comers, of all ages, sexes and persuasions, those that were not of our religion, as well as those that were; and that it was next to madness for people to plot in such meetings.

He told us we must find sureties for our good behaviour, and to answer our contempt of the king's proclamation at the next general Quarter Sessions; or else he must commit us. We told him, that knowing our innocency and that we had not mis-behaved ourselves, nor met in contempt of the king's authority, but purely in obedience to the Lord's requirings, to worship him, which we held ourselves in duty bound to do, we could not consent to be bound, for that would imply guilt, which we were free from.

'Then,' said he, 'I must commit you;' and ordered his clerk to make a mittimus. And several court orders were made, but none of them would hold; for still when they came to be read, we found such flaws in them, as made him throw them aside and write more.

He had his eye often upon me, for I was a young man, and had at that time a black suit on. At length he bid me follow him, and went into a private room and shut the door upon me. I knew not what he meant by this; but I cried in spirit to the Lord, that he would be pleased to be a mouth and wisdom to me, and keep me from being entangled in any snare.

He asked me many questions concerning my birth, my education, my acquaintance in Oxfordshire; particularly what men of note I knew there. To all which I gave him brief, but plain and true answers, naming several families of the best rank, in that part of the country where I dwelt.

He asked me how long I had been of this way, and how I came to be of it? When I had given him some account he began to persuade me to leave it, and return to the right way, the church, as he called it. I desired him to spare his pains in that respect, and forbear any discourse of that kind, for that I was fully satisfied, the way I was in was the right way, and hoped the Lord would so preserve me in it, that nothing should be able to draw or drive me out of it. He seemed not pleased with that; and thereupon went out to the rest of the company, and I followed him, glad in my heart that I had escaped so well, and praising God for my deliverance.

When he had taken his seat again at the upper end of a fair hall, he told us, he was not willing to take the utmost rigour of the law against us, but would be as favourable to us as he could. And therefore he would discharge, he said, Mr. Penington himself, because he was but at home in his own house. And he would discharge Mr. Penington of London, because he came but as a relation to visit his brother. And he would discharge the grocer of Colchester, because he came to bear Mr. Penington of London, company, and to be acquainted with Mr. Isaac Penington, whom he had never seen before. And as for those others of us, who were of this country, he would discharge them for the present at least, because

they being his neighbours, he could send for them when he would. 'But for you,' said he to George Whitehead and me, 'I can see no business you had there; and therefore I intend to hold you to it, either to give bail, or go to jail.'

We told him we could not give bail. 'Then,' said he, 'you must go to jail;' and thereupon he began to write our mittimus; which puzzled him again. For he had discharged so many, that he was at a loss what to lay as the ground of our commitment, whose case differed nothing in reality from theirs whom he had discharged.

At length, having had made several drafts, of which still George Whitehead showed him the defects, he seemed to be weary of us; and rising up said to us, 'I consider that it is grown late in the day, so that the officer cannot carry you to Aylesbury to night, and I suppose you will be willing to go back with Mr. Penington; therefore if you will promise to be forthcoming at his house to-morrow morning, I will dismiss you for the present, and you shall hear from me again to-morrow.' We told him, we did intend, if he did not otherwise dispose of us, to spend that night with our friend Isaac Penington, and would, if the Lord gave us leave, be there in the morning ready to answer his requirings. Whereupon he dismissed us all, willing, as we thought, to be rid of us; for he seemed not to be of an ill temper, nor desirous to put us to trouble if he could help it.

Back then we went to Isaac Penington's. But when we were come there, O the work we had with poor John Ovy! He was so dejected in mind, so covered with shame and confusion of face for his cowardliness, that we had enough to do to pacify him towards himself.

The place he had found out to shelter himself in, was so commodiously contrived, that undiscovered he could discern when the soldiers went off with us, and understand when the bustle was over and the coast clear. Whereupon he ventured to peep out of his hole, and in a while drew near, by degrees, to the house again; and finding all things quiet and still, he adventured to step within the doors, and found the Friends, who were left behind, peaceably settled in the meeting again.

The sight of this smote him, and made him sit down among them. And after the meeting was ended, and the friends departed to their several homes, addressing himself to Mary Penington as the mistress of the house, he could not enough magnify the bravery and courage of the Friends, nor sufficiently debase himself. He told her how long he had been a professor, what pains he had taken, what hazards he had run, in his youthful days, to get to meetings; how, when the ways were forelaid, and passages stopped, he swam through rivers to reach a meeting; 'And now,' said he, 'that I am grown old in the profession of religion, and have long been an instructor and encourager of others, that I should thus shamefully fall short myself, is matter of shame and sorrow to me.' Thus he bewailed himself to her;—when we came back, he renewed his complaints of himself to us, with high aggravations of his own cowardice. Which gave occasion to some of the Friends, tenderly to represent to him the difference between profession and possession, form and power.

He was glad, he said, on our behalf, that we came off so well, and escaped imprisonment. But when he

understood that George Whitehead and I were liable to an after-reckoning next morning, he was troubled, and wished the morning was come and gone, that we might be gone with it.

We spent the evening in grave conversation, and in religious discourse, attributing the deliverance, we hitherto had, to the Lord. The next morning when we were up and had eaten, we tarried some time to see what the justice would do further with us, and to discharge our engagement to him; the rest of the Friends, who were before fully discharged, tarrying also with us to see the event.

When we had staid so long, that on all hands it was concluded we might safely go, George Whitehead and I left a few words in writing, to be sent to the justice, if he sent after us, importing that we had tarried till such an hour, and not hearing from him, did now hold ourselves free to depart; yet so, as that if he should have occasion to send for us again, upon notice thereof we would return. This done, we took our leave of the family, and one of another; they who were for London taking horse, and I and my companion, setting forth on foot for Oxfordshire, went to Wiccomb, where we made a short stay to rest and refresh ourselves, and from there reached our respective homes that night.

After I had spent some time at home, where, as I had no restraint, so my sisters being gone, I had now no society, I walked up to Chalfont again, and spent a few days with my friends there.

As soon as I came in, I was told that my father had been there that day to see Isaac Penington and his wife; but they being abroad at a meeting, he returned to his inn in the town, where he intended to lodge that night. After supper, Mary Penington told me she had a mind to go and see him at his inn, the woman of the house being a friend of ours, and I went with her. He seemed somewhat surprised to see me there, because he thought I had been at home at his house; but he took no notice of my hat, at least showed no offence at it; for as I afterwards understood, he had now an intention to sell his estate, and thought he should need my concurrence therein; which made him now hold it necessary to admit me again into some degree of favour. After we had tarried some little time with him, she rising up to be gone, he waited on her home, and having spent about an hour with us in the family, I waited on him back to his inn. On the way, he invited me to come up to London to see my sisters, the younger of whom was then newly married, and directed me where to find them; and also gave me money to defray my charges. Accordingly I went; yet staid not long there, but returned to my friend Isaac Penington's where I made a little stay, and from there went back to Crowell.

When I was ready to set forth, my friend Isaac Penington was so kind as to send a servant with a brace of geldings, to carry me as far as I thought fit to ride, and to bring the horses back. I, intending to go no farther that day than to Wiccomb, rode no farther than to Beaconsfield town's-end, having then but five miles to walk. But here a new exercise befel me, the manner of which was thus:

Before I had walked to the middle of the town, I was stopped and taken up by the watch. I asked the watchman, what authority he had to stop me, travelling peaceably on the highway? He told me he would show me his authority; and in order thereunto, had me into a house hard by, where dwelt a scrivener, whose name was Pepys. To him he gave the order which he had received from the

constables, which directed him to take up all rogues, vagabonds and sturdy beggars. I asked him, for which of these he stopped me? but he could not answer me.

I thereupon informed him what a rogue in law is, namely: One, who for some notorious offence was burnt on the shoulder; and I told them they might search me if they pleased, and see if I was so branded. A vagabond, I told them, was one that had no dwelling-house, nor certain place of abode; but I had, and was going to it; and I told them where it was. And for a beggar, I bid them bring any one that could say, I had begged or asked relief. This stopped the fellow's mouth, yet he would not let me go; but being both weak-headed and strong-willed, he left me there with the scrivener, and went out to seek the constable; and having found him, brought him there. He was a young man, by trade a tanner, somewhat better mannered than this wardsman, but not of much better judgment. He took me with him to his house. And having settled me there, went out to take advice, as I supposed, what to do with me; leaving nobody in the house to guard me, but his wife, who had a young child in her arms.

She inquired of me, upon what account I was taken up; and seeming to have some pity for me, endeavoured to persuade me not to stay, but to go my way—offering to show me a back way from their house, which would bring me into the road again beyond the town, so that none of the town should see me, or know what was become of me. But I told her I could not do so.

Then having sat a while in a muse, she asked me if there was not a place in Scripture which said, Peter was at a tanner's house? I told her there was such a Scripture, and directed her where to find it.

After some time, she laid her child to sleep in the cradle, and stepped out on a sudden; but came not in again for a while.

I was uneasy that I was left alone in the house, fearing lest, if any thing should be missing, I might be suspected to have taken it; yet I dared not go out to stand in the street, lest it should be thought I intended to slip away.

But besides that, I soon found work to employ myself in; for the child quickly waking, fell to crying, and I was made to rock the cradle in my own defence, that I might not be annoyed with a noise, to me not more unpleasant than unusual. At length the woman came in again, and finding me nursing the child, gave me many thanks, and seemed well pleased with my company.

When night came on, the constable himself came in again, and told me some of the chief of the town were met together, to consider what was fit to do with me; and that I must go with him to them. I went, and he brought me to a little nasty hut, which they called a town-house, adjoining to their market-house, in which dwelt a poor old woman whom they called mother Grime, where also the watch used by turns to come in and warm themselves in the night.

When I came in among them, some of them looked sourly on me, and asked me some impertinent questions; to which I gave them suitable answers. Then they consulted one with another, how they should dispose of me that night, till they could have me before some justice of peace to be examined. Some

proposed that I should be had to an inn, or other public house, and a guard set on me there. He that started this was probably an inn-keeper, and consulted his own interest. Others objected against this, that it would bring a charge on the town. To avoid which, they were for having the watch take charge of me, and keep me walking about the streets with them till morning. Most voices seemed to go this way; till a third wished them to consider, whether they could answer the doing of that, and the law would bear them out in it? And this put them to a stand. I heard all their debates, but let them alone, and kept my mind to the Lord.

While they thus bandied the matter to and fro, one of the company asked the rest, if any of them knew who this young man was, and where he was going? Whereupon the constable, to whom I had given both my name and the name of the town where I dwelt, told them my name was Ellwood, and that I lived at a town called Crowell, in Oxfordshire.

Old mother Grime, sitting by and hearing this, clapped her hand on her knee, and cried out, 'I know Mr. Ellwood of Crowell very well. For when I was a maid I lived with his grandfather there, when he was a young man.' And thereupon she gave them such an account of my father, as made them look more regardfully on me; and so mother Grime's testimony turned the scale, and took me off from walking the rounds with the watch that night.

The constable hereupon bid them take no further care, I should lie at his house that night, and accordingly took me home with him, where I had as good accommodation as the house did afford. Before I went to bed, he told me that there was to be a visitation, or spiritual court, as he called it, holden next day at Amersham, about four miles from Beaconsfield, and that I was to be carried there.

This was a new thing to me, and it brought a fresh exercise upon my mind. But being given up, in the will of God, to suffer what he should permit to be laid on me, I endeavoured to keep my mind quiet and still.

In the morning, as soon as I was up, my spirit was exercised towards the Lord, in strong cries to him, that he would stand by me and preserve me, and not permit me to be taken in the snare of the wicked. While I was thus crying to the Lord, the other constable came, and I was called down.

This was a budge fellow, and talked high. He was a shoe-maker by trade, and his name was Clark. He threatened me with the spiritual court. But when he saw I did not regard it, he stopped, and left the matter to his partner, who pretended more kindness for me, and therefore went about to persuade Clark to let me go out at the back door, and so slip away.

The plot, I suppose, was so laid, that Clark should seem averse, but at length yield, which he did; but would have me take it for a favour. But I was so far from taking it so, that I would not take it at all; but told them plainly, that as I came in at the fore-door, so I would go out at the fore-door. When therefore they saw they could not bow me to their will, they brought me out at the fore-door into the street, and wished me a good journey. Yet before I went, calling for the woman of the house, I paid her for my

supper and lodging, for I had now got a little money in my pocket again.

After this I got home, as I thought, very well; but I had not been long at home, before an illness seized on me, which proved to be the small-pox. Of which, so soon as Friends had notice, I had a nurse sent me; and in a while Isaac Penington and his wife's daughter, Gulielma Maria Springett, to whom I had been playfellow in our infancy, came to visit me, bringing with them our dear friend Edward Burrough, by whose ministry I was called to the knowledge of the Truth.

It pleased the Lord to deal favourably with me in this illness, both inwardly and outwardly. For his supporting presence was with me, which kept my spirit near unto him; and though the distemper was strong upon me, yet I was preserved through it, and my countenance was not much altered by it. But after I was got up again, and while I kept my chamber, wanting some employment for entertainment sake, to spend the time with, and there being at hand a pretty good library of books, amongst which were the works of Augustine, and others of those ancient writers, who were by many called the Fathers, I betook myself to reading. These books being printed in the old black letter, with abbreviations of the words, difficult to be read, I spent too much time therein, and much impaired my sight, which was not strong before, and was now weaker than usual, by reason of the illness I had so newly had, which proved an injury to me afterwards; for which reason I here mention it.

After I was well enough to go abroad, with respect to my own health and the safety of others, I went up, in the beginning of the twelfth month, 1661, to my friend Isaac Penington's, at Chalfont, and abode there some time, for airing myself more fully, that I might be more fit for conversation.

1662.—I mentioned before, that when I was a boy, I had made good progress in learning, and lost it all again before I came to be a man; nor was I rightly sensible of my loss, until I came amongst the Quakers. But then I both saw my loss, and lamented it; and applied myself with the utmost diligence, at all leisure times, to recover it; so false I found that charge to be, which in those times was cast as a reproach upon the Quakers, that they despised and decried all human learning; because they denied it to be essentially necessary to a gospel ministry, which was one of the controversies of those times.

But though I toiled hard and spared no pains, to regain what once I had been master of; yet I found it a matter of so great difficulty, that I was ready to say as the noble eunuch to Philip in another case, 'How can I, unless I had some man to guide me?' This I had formerly complained of to my especial friend Isaac Penington, but now more earnestly; which put him upon considering, and contriving a means for my assistance.

He had an intimate acquaintance with Dr. Paget, a physician of note in London, and he with John Milton, a gentleman of great note for learning throughout the learned world, for the accurate pieces he had written on various subjects and occasions.

This person having filled a public station in the former times, lived now a private and retired life in London; and having wholly lost his sight, kept always a man to read to him, which usually was the son

of some gentleman of his acquaintance, whom in kindness he took to improve in his learning.

Thus by the mediation of my friend Isaac Penington with Dr. Paget, and of Dr. Paget with John Milton, was I admitted to come to him; not as a servant to him, which at that time he needed not, nor to be in the house with him; but only to have the liberty of coming to his house, at certain hours, when I would, and to read to him what books he should appoint me; which was all the favour I desired.

But this being a matter which would require some time to bring it about, in the meanwhile, I returned to my father's house in Oxfordshire. I had before received direction, by letters from my eldest sister, written by my father's command, to put off what cattle he had left about his house, and to discharge his servants; which I had done at the time called Michaelmas.

So that all that winter, when I was at home, I lived like a hermit, having a pretty large house, and no body in it but myself, at nights especially; but an elderly woman, whose father had been an old servant to the family, came every morning and made my bed, and did what else I had occasion for her to do, till I fell ill of the small-pox, and then I had her with me, and the nurse. But now, understanding by letter from my sister, that my father did not intend to return to settle there, I disposed of those provisions which were in the house, that they might not be spoiled when I was gone; and because they were what I should have spent, if I had tarried there, I took the money made of them to myself, for my support at London, if the project succeeded for my going there.

This done, I committed the care of the house to a tenant of my father's, who lived in the town, and taking my leave of Crowell, went up to my sure friend Isaac Penington again. Where understanding that the mediation used for my admittance to John Milton, had succeeded so well that I might come when I would, I hastened to London, and in the first place went to wait upon him.

He received me courteously, as well for the sake of Dr. Paget who introduced me, as of Isaac Penington who recommended me; to both of whom he bore a good respect. And having inquired many things of me, with respect to my former progress in learning, he dismissed me, to provide myself such accommodations as might be most suitable to my future studies.

I went therefore and took myself a lodging as near to his house, which was then in Jewen street, as I conveniently could, and from that point forward went every day in the afternoon, except on the first-days of the week, and sitting by him in his dining-room, read to him in such books in the Latin tongue as he pleased to hear me read.

At my first sitting to read to him, observing that I used the English pronunciation, he told me, if I would have the benefit of the Latin tongue, not only to read and understand Latin authors, but to converse with foreigners, either abroad or at home, I must learn the foreign pronunciation. To this I consenting, he instructed me how to sound the vowels; so different from the common pronunciation used by the English, who Anglicise their Latin, that (with some few other variations in sounding some consonants, in particular cases; sa c before e or i, like ch;—sc before i, like sh, etc.) the Latin thus

spoken, seemed as different from that which was delivered as the English generally speak it, as if it were another language.

I had before, during my retired life at my father's, by unwearied diligence and industry, so far recovered the rules of grammar, in which I had once been very ready, that I could both read a Latin author, and after a sort, hammer out his meaning. But this change of pronunciation proved a new difficulty to me. It was now harder to me to read, than it was before to understand when read. But, "Incessant pains, The end obtains."

And so did I; which made my reading the more acceptable to my master. He, on the other hand, perceiving with what earnest desire I pursued learning, gave me not only all the encouragement, but all the help he could. For having a curious ear, he knew by my tone when I understood what I read, and when I did not; and accordingly would stop me, examine me, and open the most difficult passages to me.

Thus I went on for about six weeks time, reading to him in the afternoons; and exercising myself with my own books, in my chamber in the forenoons, and I was sensible of an improvement.

But, alas! I had fixed my studies in a wrong place. London and I could never agree for health; my lungs, as I suppose, were too tender to bear the sulphurous air of that city, so that I soon began to droop; and in less than two months time, I was made to leave both my studies and the city, and return into the country to preserve life; and much ado I had to get there.

I chose to go down to Wiccomb, and to John Raunce's house there; both as he was a physician, and his wife an honest, hearty, discreet and grave matron, of whom I had a very good esteem, and who I knew had a good regard for me.

There I lay ill a considerable time, and in that degree of weakness, that scarcely any who saw me, expected my life. But the Lord was gracious to me in my illness, and was pleased to raise me up again, that I might serve him in my generation.

As soon as I had recovered so much strength as to be fit to travel, I obtained of my father, who was then at his house in Crowell, to dispose of some things he had there, and who in my illness had come to see me, so much money as would clear all charges in the house, for both physic, food and attendance; and having fully discharged all, I took leave of my friends in that family and in the town, and returned to my studies at London.

I was very kindly received by my master, who had conceived so good an opinion of me, that my conversation I found was acceptable to him, and he seemed heartily glad of my recovery and return; and we fell again into our old method of study, I reading to him, and he explaining to me as occasion required.

But as if learning had been a forbidden fruit to me, scarcely was I well settled in my work, before I met

with another diversion, which turned me quite out of it.

A sudden storm arising, from I know not what surmise of a plot, and thereby danger to the government—the meetings of dissenters, such I mean as could be found, which perhaps were not many besides the Quakers', were broken up throughout the city, and the prisons mostly filled with our Friends.

I was that morning, which was the 26th day of the eighth month 1662, at the meeting at the Bull and Mouth, by Aldersgate, when on a sudden, a party of soldiers of the trained bands of the city, rushed in with noise and clamour, being led by one who was called major Rosewell, an apothecary, if I misremember not, and at that time under the ill name of a papist.

As soon as he was come within the room, having a file or two of musketeers at his heels, he commanded his men to present their muskets at us, which they did; with intent I suppose to strike terror into the people. Then he made a proclamation, that all who were not Quakers might depart if they would.

It so happened, that a young man, an apprentice in London, whose name was Dove, the son of Dr. Dove of Chinner, near Crowell in Oxfordshire, came that day in curiosity to see the meeting; and coming early, and finding me there, whom he knew, came and sat down by me.

As soon as he heard the noise of soldiers, he was much startled, and asked me softly, if I would not shift for myself and try to get out. I told him, no; I was in my place, and was willing to suffer if it was my lot. When he heard the notice given, that they who were not Quakers might depart, he solicited me again to be gone. I told him, I could not do so, for that would be to renounce my profession, which I would by no means do; but as for him, who was not one of us, he might do as he pleased. Whereupon, wishing me well, he turned away, and with cap in hand went out. And truly I was glad he was gone, for his master was a rigid Presbyterian, who in all likelihood would have led him a wretched life, had he been taken and imprisoned among the Quakers.

The soldiers came so early, that the meeting was not fully gathered; and when the mixed company were gone out, we were so few, and sat so thin in that large room, that they might take a clear view of us all, and single us out as they pleased.

He that commanded the party, gave us first a general charge to come out of the room. But we, who came there at God's requiring, to worship him, like that good man of old, who said, we ought to obey God rather than men. Acts 5:29., stirred not, but kept our places. Whereupon he sent some of his soldiers among us, with command to drag or drive us out; which they did roughly enough.

When we came out into the street, we were received there by other soldiers, who with their pikes holden length-ways from one to another, encompassed us round as sheep in a pound; and there we stood a while, while they were picking up more to add to our number.

In this work none seemed so eager and active as their leader, major Rosewell. Which I observing,

stepped boldly to him, as he was passing by me, and asked him if he intended a massacre? for of that, in those times, there was a great apprehension and talk. The suddenness of the question, from such a young man especially, somewhat startled him; but recollecting himself, he answered, 'No; but I intend to have you all hanged by the wholesome laws of the land.'

When he had gotten as many as he could, or thought fit, which were in number thirty-two, whereof two were caught up in the street, who had not been at the meeting, he ordered the pikes to be opened before us; and giving the word to march, went himself at the head of us—the soldiers with their pikes making a lane to keep us from scattering.

He led us up Martins, and so turned down to Newgate, where I expected he would have lodged us. But to my disappointment, he went on through Newgate, and turning through the Old-Bailey, brought us into Fleet street. I was then wholly at a loss to conjecture where he would lead us, unless it were to Whitehall, for I knew nothing then of Old-Bridewell; but on a sudden he gave a short turn, and brought us before the gate of that prison, where knocking, the wicket was forthwith opened, and the master with his porter ready to receive us.

One of those two who were picked up in the street, being near me, and telling me his case, I stepped to the major, and told him, that this man was not at the meeting, but was taken up in the street; and showed him how hard and unjust a thing it would be to put him into prison.

I had not pleased him before in the question I had put to him about a massacre; and that, I suppose, made this solicitation less acceptable to him from me, than it might have been from some other. For looking sternly on me, he said, 'Who are you, that take so much upon you? Seeing you are so busy, you shall be the first man that shall go into Bridewell;' and taking me by the shoulders, he thrust me in.

As soon as I was in, the porter pointing with his finger, directed me to a fair pair of stairs on the further side of a large court, and bid me go up those stairs, and go on till I could go no further. Accordingly I went up the stairs; the first flight whereof brought me to a fair chapel on my left hand, which I could look into through the iron grates, but could not have gone into if I would.

I knew that was not a place for me. Wherefore following my direction, and the winding of the stairs, I went up a story higher, which brought me into a room, which I soon perceived to be a court-room, or place of judicature.

After I had stood a while there, and taken a view of it, observing a door on the further side, I went to it and opened it, with intention to go in; but I quickly drew back, being almost affrighted at the dismalness of the place. For besides that the walls quite round were laid all over, from top to bottom in black, there stood in the middle of it a great whipping-post, which was all the furniture it had.

In one of these two rooms judgment was given, and in the other it was executed on those ill people, who for their lewdness were sent to this prison, and there sentenced to be whipped. Which was so contrived, that the court might not only hear, but if they pleased, see their sentence executed.

A sight so unexpected, and withal so unpleasing, gave me no encouragement either to rest, or indeed to enter at all there; till looking earnestly, I spied on the opposite side a door, which giving me hopes of a further progress, I ventured to step hastily to it, and opened it.

This let me into one of the fairest rooms that, so far as I remember, I was ever in; and no wonder,—for though it was now put to this sad use, it had, for many ages past, been the royal seat or palace of the kings of England, until Cardinal Wolsey built Whitehall, and offered it as a peace offering to king Henry the eighth; who until that time had kept his court in this house, and had this, as the people in the house reported, for his dining room, by which name it then went.

This room in length, for I lived long enough in it to have time to measure it, was threescore feet; and had breadth proportionable to it. In it, on the front side, were very large bay windows, in which stood a large table. It had other very large tables in it, with benches round; and at that time the floor was covered with rushes against some solemn festival, which I heard it was bespoken for.

Here was my *nil ultra*, and here I found I might set up my pillar; for although there was a door out of it, to a back pair of stairs which led to it, yet that was kept locked. So that finding I had now followed my keeper's direction to the utmost point, beyond which I could not go, I sat down and considered that rhetorical saying, "That the way to Heaven lay by the gate of hell;" the black room, through which I passed into this, bearing some resemblance to the latter, as this comparatively and by way of allusion, might in some sort be thought to bear to the former.

But I was quickly put out of these thoughts, by the flocking in of the other Friends, my fellow-prisoners; amongst whom yet, when all were come together, there was but one whom I knew so much as by face, and with him I had no acquaintance. For I having been but a little while in the city, and in that time kept close to my studies, I was by that means known to very few.

Soon after we were all gotten together, the master of the house came up after us, and demanded our names; which we might reasonably have refused to give, till we had been legally convened before some civil magistrate, who had power to examine us and demand our names. But we, who were neither guileful nor wilful, simply gave him our names, which he took down in writing.

It was, as I hinted before, a general storm which fell that day, but it lighted most heavily upon our meetings; so that most of our men Friends were made prisoners, and the prisons generally filled. And great work had the women, to run about from prison to prison, to find their husbands, their fathers, their brothers, or their servants; for accordingly as they had disposed themselves to several meetings, so were they dispersed to several prisons. And no less care and pains had they, when they had found them, to furnish them with provisions and other necessary accommodations.

But an excellent order, even in those early days, was practised among the Friends of that city, by which there were certain Friends of either sex, appointed to have the oversight of the prisons in every quarter, and to take care of all Friends, the poor especially, that should be committed there.

This prison of Bridewell, was under the care of two honest, grave, discreet and motherly women, whose names were Anne Merrick, afterwards Vivers, and Anne Travers, both widows. So soon as they understood that there were Friends brought into that prison, they provided some hot victuals, meat and broth, for the weather was cold, and ordering their servants to bring it, with bread, cheese and beer, came themselves also with it; and having placed it on a table, gave notice to us, that it was provided for all those that had not others to provide for them; or were not able to provide for themselves. And indeed there were among us a competent number of such guests.

As for my part, though I had lived as frugally as possibly I could, that I might draw out the thread of my little stock to the utmost length, yet had I, by this time, reduced it to ten pence, which was all the money I had about me, or any where else at my command.

This was but a small estate to enter upon an imprisonment with, yet was I not at all discouraged at it, nor had I a murmuring thought. I had known what it was moderately to abound, and if I should now come to suffer need, I knew I ought to be content; and through the grace of God I was so. I had lived by Providence before, when for a long time I had no money at all, and I had always found the Lord a good provider. I made no doubt, therefore, that He who sent the ravens to feed Elijah, and who clothes the lilies, would find some means to sustain me with needful food and raiment; and I had learned by experience, the truth of that saying, "Nature is content with few things, or a little."

Although the sight and smell of hot food was sufficiently enticing to my empty stomach, for I had eaten little that morning, and was hungry; yet considering the terms of the invitation, I questioned whether I was included in it; and after some reasonings, at length concluded, that while I had ten pence in my pocket, I should be but an intruder to that mess, which was provided for such as, perhaps, had not two pence in theirs.

Being come to this resolution, I withdrew as far from the table as I could, and sat down in a quiet retirement of mind, till the repast was over, which was not long; for there were hands enough at it, to make light work of it.

When evening came, the porter came up the back stairs, and opening the door, told us, if we desired to have any thing that was to be had in the house, he would bring it to us; for there was in the house, a chandler's shop, at which beer, bread, butter, cheese, eggs, and bacon, might be had for money. Upon which many went to him, and spoke for what of these things they had a mind to, giving him money to pay for them.

Among the rest went I, and intending to spin out my ten pence as far as I could, desired him to bring me a penny loaf only. When he returned, we all resorted to him to receive our several provisions, which he delivered; and when he came to me, he told me he could not get a penny loaf, but he had brought me two half-penny loaves.

This suited me better; wherefore returning to my place again, I sat down and eat up one of my loaves,

reserving the other for the next day. This was to me both dinner and supper. And so well satisfied I was with it, that I could willingly then have gone to bed, if I had had one to go to; but that was not to be expected there, nor had any one any bedding brought in that night.

Some of the company had been so considerate, as to send for a pound of candles, that we might not sit all night in the dark, and having lighted several of them, and placed them in several parts of that large room, we kept walking to keep us warm.

After I had warmed myself pretty thoroughly, and the evening was pretty far spent, I bethought myself of a lodging; and cast mine eye on the table which stood in the bay-window, the frame whereof, looked, I thought, somewhat like a bedstead. Willing to make sure of that, I gathered up a good arm-full of the rushes, wherewith the floor was covered, and spreading them under that table, crept in upon them in my clothes, and keeping on my hat, laid my head upon one end of the table's frame, instead of a bolster.

My example was followed by the rest, who gathering up the rushes as I had done, made themselves beds in other parts of the room, and so to rest we went.

I having a quiet, easy mind, was soon asleep, and slept till about the middle of the night. And then waking, finding my legs and feet very cold, I crept out of my cabin and began to walk about.

This waked and raised all the rest, who finding themselves cold, as well as I, got up and walked about with me, till we had pretty well warmed ourselves, and then we all lay down again and rested till morning.

Next day, all they who had families, or belonged to families, had bedding of one sort or other, brought in, which they disposed at the ends and sides of the room, leaving the middle void to walk in.

But I, who had nobody to look after me, kept to my rush-pallet under the table, for four nights together, in which time I did not put off my clothes; yet, through the merciful goodness of God to me, I rested and slept well, and enjoyed health, without taking cold.

In this time, several of our company, through the solicitations of some of their relations or acquaintance to Sir Richard Brown, who was at that time a great master of misrule in the city, and over Bridewell more especially, were released; and among these, one William Mucklow, who lay in a hammock. He having observed that I only was unprovided with lodging, came very courteously to me, and kindly offered me the use of his hammock while I should continue a prisoner.

This was a providential accommodation to me, which I received thankfully, both from the Lord and from him; and from that point forward I thought I lay as well as ever I had done in my life.

Amongst those that remained, there were several young men who cast themselves into a club, and laying down every one an equal proportion of money, put it into the hand of our friend Anne Travers, desiring her to lay it out for them in provisions, and send them in every day, a mess of hot meat; and

they kindly invited me to come into their club with them. These saw my person, and judged of me by that; but they saw not my purse, nor understood the lightness of my pocket. But I, who alone understood my own condition, knew I must sit down with lower commons. Wherefore, not giving them the true reason, I as fairly as I could, excused myself from entering at present into their mess, and went on as before, to eat by myself, and that very sparingly, as my stock would bear. And before my ten pence was quite spent, Providence, on whom I relied, sent me in a fresh supply.

For William Penington, a brother of Isaac Penington's, a Friend and merchant in London, at whose house, before I came to live in the city, I was wont to lodge, having been at his brother's that day upon a visit, escaped this storm, and so was at liberty; and understanding when he came back, what had been done, bethought himself of me, and upon inquiry, hearing where I was, came in love to see me.

He in discourse, amongst other things, asked me how it was with me as to money? and how well I was furnished? I told him I could not boast of much, and yet I could not say I had none; though what I then had was indeed next to none. Thereupon he put twenty shillings into my hand, and desired me to accept of that for the present. I saw a Divine hand in thus opening his heart and hand in this manner to me. And though I would willingly have been excused from taking so much, and would have returned one half of it, yet he pressing it all upon me, I received it with a thankful acknowledgment, as a token of love from the Lord and from him.

On the seventh-day he went down again, as he usually did, to his brother's house at Chalfont, and in discourse gave them an account of my imprisonment. Whereupon, at his return on the second-day of the week following, my affectionate friend, Mary Penington, sent me by him, forty shillings, which he soon after brought me; out of which I would have repaid him the twenty shillings he had so kindly furnished me with, but he would not admit it, telling me, I might have occasion for that and more, before I got my liberty.

Not many days after this, I received twenty shillings from my father, who being then at his house in Oxfordshire, and by letter from my sister, understanding that I was a prisoner in Bridewell, sent this money to me for my support there; and withal a letter to my sister, for her to deliver to one called Mr. Wray, who lived near Bridewell, and was a servant to sir Richard Brown in some wharf of his, requesting him to intercede with his master, who was one of the governors of Bridewell, for my deliverance. But that letter coming to my hands, I suppressed it, and have it yet by me.

Now was my pocket, from the lowest ebb, risen to a full tide. I was at the brink of destitution, next door to nothing, yet my confidence did not fail, nor my faith stagger; and now on a sudden I had plentiful supplies, shower upon shower, so that I abounded, yet was not lifted up, but in humility could say, This is the Lord's doing. And without defrauding any of the instruments of the acknowledgment due to them, mine eye looked over and beyond them to the Lord, who I saw was the author thereof and prime agent therein, and with a thankful heart I returned thanksgivings and praises to him. And this great goodness of the Lord to me, I thus record, to the end that all into whose hands this may come, may be encouraged to trust in the Lord, whose mercy is over all his works, and who is indeed a God near at hand, to help in

the needful time.

I dared now venture myself into the club, to which I had been invited, and accordingly, having by this time gained an acquaintance with them, took an opportunity to cast myself among them; and from that point forward, so long as we continued prisoners together, I was one of their mess.

And now the chief thing I lacked was employment, which scarcely any lacked but myself; for the rest of my company were generally tradesmen, of such trades as could set themselves at work. Of these, several were tailors, some masters, some journeymen, and with these I most inclined to settle. But because I was too much a novice in their art to be trusted with their work, lest I should spoil the garment, I got work from a hosier in Cheapside, which was to make night-waistcoats of red and yellow flannel, for women and children. And with this I entered myself among the tailors; sitting cross-legged as they did, and so spent those leisure hours with innocency and pleasure, which lack of business would have made tedious. And indeed that was, in a manner, the only advantage I had by it; for my master, though a very wealthy man, and one who professed not only friendship, but particular kindness to me, dealt I thought but hardly with me. For, though he knew not what I had to subsist by, he never offered me a penny for my work, till I had done working for him, and went, after I was released, to give him a visit; and then he would not reckon with me neither, because, as he smilingly said, he would not let me so far into his trade, as to acquaint me with the prices of the work; but would be sure to give me enough. And thereupon he gave me one crown-piece and no more; though I had wrought long for him, and made him many dozens of waistcoats, and bought the thread myself; which I thought was very poor pay. But, as Providence had ordered it, I desired the work more than the wages, and therefore took what he gave me without complaining.

About this time, while we were prisoners in our fair chamber, a Friend was brought and put in among us, who had been sent there by Richard Brown to beat hemp; whose case was thus: He was a very poor man, who lived by mending shoes; and late on a seventh-day night a car-man, or some other such labouring man, brought him a pair of shoes to mend, desiring him to mend them that night, that he might have them in the morning, for he had no other to wear. The poor man sat up at work upon them till after midnight, and then finding he could not finish them, he went to bed, intending to do the rest in the morning.

Accordingly he got up betimes, and though he wrought as privately as he could in his chamber, that he might avoid giving offence to any, yet could he not do it so privately, but that an ill-natured neighbour perceived it, who went and informed against him for “working on the Sunday.” Whereupon he was had before Richard Brown, who committed him to Bridewell for a certain time, to be kept to hard labour in beating hemp, which is labour hard enough.

It so fell out, that at the same time were committed there, for what cause I do not now remember, two lusty young men who were called Baptists, to be kept also at the same labour.

The Friend was a poor little man, of a low condition and appearance; whereas these two Baptists were

topping blades, that looked high and spake big. They scorned to beat hemp, and made a pish at the whipping-post; but when they had once felt the smart of it, they soon acknowledged their guilt, and submitting to the punishment, set their tender hands to the beetles.

The Friend, on the other hand acting upon a principle, as knowing he had done no evil for which he should undergo that punishment, refused to work, and for refusing was cruelly whipped; which he bore with wonderful constancy and resolution of mind.

The manner of whipping there, is to strip the party to the skin from the waist upwards, and having fastened him to the whipping-post, so that he can neither resist nor shun the strokes, to lash the naked body with long, but slender twigs of holly, which will bend almost like thongs and lap round the body; and these having little knots upon them, tear the skin and flesh, and give extreme pain.

With these rods they tormented the Friend most barbarously; and the more, for that having mastered the two braving Baptists, they disdained to be mastered by this poor Quaker. Yet were they made at last to yield, when they saw their utmost severity could not make him yield. And then not willing to be troubled longer with him, they turned him up among us.

When we had inquired of him how it was with him; and he had given us a brief account of both his cause and usage, it came in my mind, that I had in my box, which I had sent for from my lodging, to keep some few books and other necessaries in, a little gallypot with Lucatelli's balsam in it.

Wherefore causing a good fire to be made, and setting the Friend within a blanket before the fire, we stripped him to the waist, as if he had been to be whipped again, and found his skin so cut and torn with the knotty holly rods, both back, side, arm and breast, that it was a dismal sight to look upon. Then melting some of the balsam, I with a feather anointed all the sores, and putting a softer cloth between his skin and his shirt, helped him on with his clothes again. This dressing gave him much ease, and I continued it till he was well. And because he was a very poor man, we took him into our mess, contriving that there should always be enough for him as well as for ourselves. Thus he lived with us until the time he was committed for was expired, and then he was released.

But we were still continued prisoners by an arbitrary power, not being committed by the civil authority, nor having seen the face of any civil magistrate, from the day we were thrust in here by soldiers, which was the 26th day of the eighth month, to the 19th of the tenth month following.

On that day we were had to the sessions at the Old-bailey. But not being called there, we were brought back to Bridewell, and continued there to the 29th of the same month, and then we were carried to the sessions again.

I expected I should have been called the first, because my name was first taken down; but it proved otherwise, so that I was one of the last that was called; which gave me the advantage of hearing the pleas of the other prisoners, and discovering the temper of the court.

The prisoners complained of the illegality of their imprisonment, and desired to know what they had lain so long in prison for? The court regarded nothing of that, and did not stick to tell them so. 'For,' said the recorder to them, 'if you think you have been wrongfully imprisoned, you have your remedy at law, and may take it, if you think it worth your while. The court,' said he, 'may send for any man out of the street, and tender him the oath: so we take no notice how you came here, but finding you here, we tender you the oath of allegiance; which if you refuse to take, we shall commit you, and at length premunire you.' Accordingly, as every one refused it, he was set aside and another called.

By this I saw, it was in vain for me to insist upon false imprisonment, or ask the cause of my commitment; though I had before furnished myself with some authorities and maxims of law on that subject, to have pleaded if room had been given; and I had the book, out of which I took them, in my bosom; for the weather being cold, I wore a gown girt about the middle, and had put the book within it. But I now resolved to wave all that, and insist upon another plea, which just then came into my mind.

As soon therefore as I was called, I stepped nimbly to the bar, and stood up upon the stepping, that I might the better both hear and be heard; and laying my hands upon the bar, stood ready, expecting what they would say to me.

I suppose they took me for a confident young man, for they looked very earnestly upon me; and we faced each other, without words, for a while. At length the recorder, who was called sir John Howell, asked me if I would take the oath of allegiance? To which I answered, 'I conceive this court has not power to tender that oath to me, in the condition wherein I stand.'

This unexpected plea seemed to startle them, so that they looked one upon another, and said somewhat low one to another, 'What! does he demur to the jurisdiction of the court?' And thereupon the recorder asked me, 'Do you then demur to the jurisdiction of the court?' Not absolutely, answered I, but conditionally, with respect to my present condition, and the circumstances I am now under.

'Why, what is your present condition?' said the recorder. 'A prisoner,' replied I. 'And what is that,' said he, 'to your taking, or not taking the oath?' Enough, said I, as I conceive, to exempt me from the tender thereof, while I am under this condition. 'Pray, what is your reason for that?' said he. This, said I; that if I rightly understand the words of the statute, I am required to say, that I do take this oath freely and without constraint; which I cannot say, because I am not a free man, but in bonds, and under constraint. Wherefore I conceive, that if you would tender that oath to me, you ought first to set me free from my present imprisonment.

'But,' said the recorder, 'will you take the oath if you be set free?' 'You shall see that,' said I, 'when I am set free. Therefore set me free first, and then ask the question.'

'But,' said he again, 'you know your own mind sure, and can tell now what you would do, if you were at liberty.' Yes, replied I, that I can; but I don't hold myself obliged to tell it until I am at liberty. Therefore set me at liberty, and you shall soon hear it.

Thus we fenced a good while, till I was both weary of such trifling, and doubted also, lest some of the standers by should suspect I would take it, if I was at liberty. Wherefore when the recorder put it upon me again, I told him plainly, no; though I thought they ought not to tender it me till I had been set at liberty; yet if I was set at liberty, I could not take that or any other oath, because my Lord and Master Christ Jesus, had expressly commanded his disciples not to swear at all.

As his command was enough to me, so this confession of mine was enough to them. 'Take him away,' said they: and away I was taken and thrust into the bail-dock to my other friends, who had been called before me. And as soon as the rest of our company were called, and had refused to swear, we were all committed to Newgate, and thrust into the common side.

When we came there, we found that side of the prison very full of Friends, who were prisoners there before, as indeed were, at that time, all the other parts of that prison, and most of the other prisons about the town, and our addition caused a great throng on that side. Notwithstanding which, we were kindly welcomed by our friends, whom we found there, and entertained by them, as well as their condition would admit, until we could get in our own accommodations, and provide for ourselves.

We had the liberty of the hall, which is on the first story over the gate, and which, in the day-time, is common to all the prisoners on that side, felons as well as others, to walk in and to beg out of, and we had also the liberty of some other rooms over that hall, to walk or work in by day. But in the night we all lodged in one room, which was large and round, having in the middle of it a great pillar of oaken timber, which bore up the chapel that is over it.

To this pillar we fastened our hammocks at the one end, and to the opposite wall on the other end, quite round the room, and in three degrees, or three stories high, one over the other; so that they who lay in the upper and middle row of hammocks, were obliged to go to bed first, because they were to climb up to the higher, by getting into the lower. And under the lower rank of hammocks, by the wall-sides were laid beds upon the floor, in which the sick, and such weak persons as could not get into the hammocks, lay. And indeed, though the room was large and pretty airy, yet the breath and steam that came from so many bodies of different ages, conditions and constitutions, packed up so close together, was enough to cause sickness amongst us, and I believe did so. For there were many sick and some very weak; though we were not long there, yet in that time one of our fellow-prisoners, who lay in one of those pallet-beds, died.

This caused some bustle in the house. For the body of the deceased being laid out, and put into a coffin, was carried down and set in the room called the Lodge, that the coroner might inquire into the cause and manner of his death. And the manner of their doing it is thus: as soon as the coroner is come, the turnkeys run out into the street under the gate, and seize upon every man that passes by, till they have got enough to make up the coroner's inquest. And so resolute these rude fellows are, that if any man resist, or dispute it with them, they drag him in by main force, not regarding what condition he is of. No, I have been told, they will not stick to stop a coach, and pluck the men out of it.

It so happened, that at this time they lighted on an ancient man, a grave citizen, who was trudging through the gate in great haste, and him they laid hold on, telling him he must come in and serve upon the coroner's inquest. He pleaded hard, begged and besought them to let him go, assuring them he was going on very urgent business, and that the stopping him would be greatly to his prejudice. But they were deaf to all entreaties, and hurried him in, the poor man chafing without remedy.

When they had got their complement and were shut in together, the rest of them said to this ancient man, 'Come, father, you are the oldest among us, you shall be our foreman.' And when the coroner had sworn them on the jury, the coffin was uncovered, that they might look upon the body. But the old man, disturbed in his mind at the interruption, they had given him, was grown somewhat fretful upon it—said to them, 'to what purpose do you show us a dead body here? You would not have us think sure, that this man died in this room? How then shall we be able to judge how this man came by his death, unless we see the place wherein he died, and wherein he has been kept prisoner before he died? How know we, but that the incommodiousness of the place wherein he was kept may have occasioned his death? Therefore show us,' said he, 'the place wherein this man died.'

This much displeased the keepers, and they began to banter the old man, thinking to have beaten him off it. But he stood up tightly to them; 'Come, come,' said he, 'though you have made a fool of me in bringing me in here, you shall not find a child of me now I am here. Mistake not yourselves; I understand my place and your duty; and I require you to conduct me and my brethren, to the place where this man died: refuse it at your peril.'

They now wished they had let the old man go about his business, rather than by troubling him, have brought this trouble on themselves. But when they saw he persisted in his resolution, and was peremptory, the coroner told them they must show him the place.

It was in the evening when they began this work; and by this time it was grown bed-time with us, so that we had taken down our hammocks, which in the day were hung up by the walls, and had made them ready to go into, and were undressing ourselves in readiness to go into them. When on a sudden we heard a great noise of tongues and of trampling of feet coming up towards us. And by and by one of the turnkeys opening our door, said, 'Hold, hold, don't undress yourselves, here's the coroner's inquest coming to see you.'

As soon as they were come to the door, for within the door there was scarcely room for them to come, the foreman who led them, lifting up his hand, said, 'Lord bless me, what a sight is here! I did not think there had been so much cruelty in the hearts of Englishmen, to use Englishmen in this manner! We need not now question,' said he to the rest of the jury, 'how this man came by his death; we may rather wonder that they are not all dead, for this place is enough to breed an infection among them. Well,' added he, 'if it please God to lengthen my life till to-morrow, I will find means to let the king know how his subjects are dealt with.'

Whether he did so or no, I cannot tell; but I am apt to think that he applied himself to the mayor, or the

sheriffs of London. For the next day one of the sheriffs, called sir William Turner, a woollen draper in Paul's yard, came to the press yard, and having ordered the porter of Bridewell to attend him there, sent up a turnkey amongst us, to bid all the Bridewell prisoners come down to him, for they knew us not, but we knew our own company.

Being come before him in the press yard, he looked kindly on us, and spake courteously to us. 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'I understand the prison is very full, and I am sorry for it. I wish it were in my power to release you and the rest of your friends that are in it. But since I cannot do that, I am willing to do what I can for you. And therefore I am come here to inquire how it is: and I would have all you, who came from Bridewell, to return there again, which will be a better accommodation to you; and your removal will give the more room to those that are left behind; and here is the porter of Bridewell, your old keeper, to attend you there.'

We duly acknowledged the favour of the sheriff to us and our friends above, in this removal of us, which would give them more room, and us better air. But before we parted from him, I spake particularly to him on another occasion, which was this:

When we came into Newgate, we found a shabby fellow there among the Friends, who upon inquiry, we understood had thrust himself among our Friends, when they were taken at a meeting, on purpose to be sent to prison with them, in hopes to be maintained by them. They knew nothing of him, till they found him shut in with them in the prison, and then took no notice of him, as not knowing how or why he came there. But he soon gave them cause to take notice of him; for wherever he saw food brought forth for them to eat, he would be sure to thrust in with knife in hand, and make himself his own carver; and so impudent was he, that if he saw the provision was short, regardless who had not eaten, he would be sure to take enough.

Thus lived this lazy drone upon the labours of the industrious bees, to his high content and their no small trouble, to whom his company was as offensive, as his ravening was oppressive; nor could they get any relief by their complaining of him to the keepers.

This fellow hearing the notice which was given for the Bridewell men to go down, in order to be removed to Bridewell again, and hoping no doubt, that fresh quarters would produce fresh commons, and that he should fare better with us than where he was, thrust himself amongst us, and went down into the press yard with us. Which I knew not of, till I saw him standing there with his hat on, and looking as demurely as he could, that the sheriff might take him for a Quaker: at sight of which my spirit was much stirred.

Wherefore, as soon as the sheriff had done speaking to us, and we had made our acknowledgment of his kindness, I stepped a little nearer to him, and pointing to that fellow, said, That man is not only none of our company, for he is no Quaker; but is an idle dissolute fellow, who has thrust himself in among our friends, to be sent to prison with them, that he might live upon them; therefore I desire we may not be troubled with him at Bridewell.

At this the sheriff smiled; and calling the fellow forth, said to him, 'How came you to be in prison?' 'I was taken at a meeting,' said he. 'But what business had you there?' said the sheriff. 'I went to hear,' said he. 'Aye, you went upon a worse design, it seems,' replied the sheriff, 'but I'll disappoint you,' said he; 'for I'll change your company, and send you to them that are like yourself.' Then calling for the turnkey, he said, 'take this fellow, and put him among the felons; and be sure let him not trouble the Quakers any more.'

Hitherto this fellow had stood with his hat on, as willing to have passed, if he could, for a Quaker; but as soon as he heard this doom passed on him, off went his hat, and to bowing and scraping he fell, with 'good your worship have pity upon me, and set me at liberty.' 'No, no,' said the sheriff, 'I will not so far disappoint you; since you had a mind to be in prison, in prison you shall be for me.' Then bidding the turnkey take him away, he had him up, and put him among the felons; and so Friends had a good deliverance from him.

The sheriff then bidding us farewell, the porter of Bridewell came to us, and told us, we knew our way to Bridewell without him, and he could trust us; therefore he would not stay or go with us, but left us to take our own time, so we were in before bed-time.

Then went we up again to our friends in Newgate, and gave them an account of what had passed; and having taken a solemn leave of them, we made up our packs to be gone. But before I pass from Newgate, I think it not amiss to give the reader some little account of what I observed while I was there.

The common side of Newgate is generally accounted, as it really is, the worst part of that prison; not so much from the place, as the people, it being usually stocked with the veriest rogues, and lowest sort of felons and pick-pockets, who not being able to pay chamber-rent on the master's side, are thrust in there. And if they come in bad, to be sure they do not go out better; for here they have an opportunity to instruct one another in their art, and impart each to the other what improvements they have made therein.

The common hall, which is the first room over the gate, is a good place to walk in, when the prisoners are out of it, saving the danger of catching some cattle which they may have left in it; and there I used to walk in a morning before they were let up, and sometimes in the day-time when they have been there.

They all carried themselves respectfully towards me; which I imputed chiefly to this, That when any of our women Friends came there to visit the prisoners, if they had not relations of their own there to take care of them, I, as being a young man, and more at leisure than most others, for I could not play the tailor there, was forward to go down with them to the grate, and see them safely out. And sometimes they have left money in my hands for the felons, who at such times were very importunate beggars, which I forthwith distributed among them in bread, which was to be had in the place. But so troublesome an office it was, that I thought one had as good have had a pack of hungry hounds about one, as

these, when they knew there was a dole to be given. Yet this I think, made them a little the more observant to me; for they would dispose themselves to one side of the room, that they might make way for me to walk on the other. And when I walked there, I had usually a book in my hand, on which I had mine eye; which made them think I did not heed what they said. By this means my ear being attentive to them, I heard them relate one to another many of their roguish pranks.

One day, as I was thus walking to and fro beside them, I heard them recounting one to another what feats they had done at pocket-picking and shop-lifting. Whereupon, turning short upon them, I asked them, Which of you all will undertake to pick my pocket? They were not very forward to answer, but viewed me round. I wore a long gown, which was lapped over before and tied about the middle, and had no pocket holes in it. When they had a while considered it, and I having taken another turn, was come up again to them, one of them said, 'Why master, if you will promise not to prosecute us, we will show you a piece of our skill.' No, hold there, said I, I won't so far encourage you in evil, as to promise not to prosecute; and away I turned again, having mine eye on my book, but my ears to them. And in a while I heard them contriving how they would have done it. 'I,' said one of them, 'would give him the budge, and before he can recover himself, you,' said he to another of them, 'having your penknife ready, should slit his gown; and then,' said he, 'let Honeypot alone for the diving part.' This Honeypot was a little boy, then in prison with them for picking a pocket, who by his stature did not seem to be above ten, or a dozen years old; but for his dexterity at pocket-picking, was held to be one of the top of the trade. As for the budge, I had it given me often in the street, but understood not the meaning of it till now; and now I found it was a jostle enough to throw one almost upon his nose.

These are some of the common evils which make the common side of Newgate in measure a type of hell upon earth. But there was at that time, something of another nature, more particular and accidental, which was very offensive to me.

When we came first into Newgate, there lay in a little by-place like a closet, near the room where we were lodged, the quartered bodies of three men, who had been executed some days before, for a real or pretended plot; which was the ground, or at least pretext, for that storm in the city, which had caused this imprisonment. The names of these three men were Philips, Tongue, and Gibbs; and the reason why their quarters lay so long there was, the relations were all that while petitioning to have leave to bury them; which at length with much ado was obtained for the quarters, but not for the heads, which were ordered to be set up in some parts of the city.

I saw the heads when they were brought up to be boiled. The hangman fetched them in a dirty dust basket, out of some by-place, and setting them down amongst the felons, he and they made sport with them. They took them by the hair, flouting, jeering and laughing at them; and then giving them some ill names, boxed them on the ears and cheeks.

Which done, the hangman put them into his kettle, and parboiled them with bay salt and cummin seed; that to keep them from putrefaction, and this to keep off the fowls from seizing on them. The whole sight, as well that of the bloody quarters first, as this of the heads afterwards, was both frightful and

loathsome, and begat an abhorrence in my nature. Which as it had rendered my confinement there by much the more uneasy, so it made our removal from there to Bridewell, even in that respect, the more welcome: where we now go.

For having, as I hinted before, made up our packs, and taken our leave of our friends, whom we were to leave behind, we took our bundles on our shoulders, and walked two and two abreast, through the Old-bailey into Fleet street, and so to old Bridewell. And it being about the middle of the afternoon, and the streets pretty full of people, both the shopkeepers at their doors, and passengers in the way, would stop us, and ask us what we were, and where we were going? And when we had told them we were prisoners, going from one prison to another, from Newgate to Bridewell,—'What,' said they, 'without a keeper?' 'No,' said we, 'for our word which we have given, is our keeper,' Some thereupon would advise us not to go to prison, but to go home. But we told them, we could not do so; we could suffer for our testimony, but could not fly from it. I do not remember we had any abuse offered us, but were generally pitied by the people.

When we were come to Bridewell, we were not put up into the great room in which we had been before, but into a low room in another fair court, which had a pump in the middle of it. And here we were not shut up as before, but had the liberty of the court to walk in, and of the pump to wash or drink at. And indeed we might easily have gone quite away if we would, there being a passage through the court into the street; but we were true and steady prisoners, and looked upon this liberty, arising from their confidence in us, to be a kind of parole upon us; so that both conscience and honour stood now engaged for our true imprisonment.

Adjoining to this room wherein we were, was such another, both newly fitted up for work-houses, and accordingly furnished with very great blocks for beating hemp upon, and a lusty whipping-post there was in each. And it was said, that Richard Brown had ordered those blocks to be provided for the Quakers to work on, resolving to try his strength with us in that case; but if that was his purpose, it was over-ruled, for we never had any work offered us, nor were we treated after the manner of those that are to be so used. Yet we set ourselves to work on them; for being very large, they served the tailors for shop-boards, and others wrought upon them as they had occasion; and they served us very well for tables to eat on.

We had also besides this room, the use of our former chamber above, to go into when we thought fit; and there sometimes I withdrew, when I found a desire for retirement and privacy, or had something on my mind to write, which could not so well be done in company. And indeed, about this time my spirit was more than ordinarily exercised, though on very different subjects. For, on the one hand, the sense of the exceeding love and goodness of the Lord to me, in his gracious and tender dealings with me, deeply affected my heart, and caused me to break forth in a song of thanksgiving and praise to him: and on the other hand, a sense of the profaneness, debaucheries, cruelties, and other horrid impieties of the age, fell heavy on me, and lay as a pressing weight upon my spirit.

In this sort did I spend some leisure hours during my confinement in Bridewell, especially after our

return from Newgate there; when we had more liberty, and more opportunity and room for retirement and thought.

And this privilege we enjoyed by the indulgence of our keeper, whose heart God disposed to favour us. So that both the master and his porter were very civil and kind to us, and had been so indeed all along. For when we were shut up before, the porter would readily let some of us go home in the evening, and stay at home till next morning; which was a great conveniency to men of trade and business, which I being free from, forbore asking for myself, that I might not hinder others.

This he observed, and asked me when I meant to ask to go out? I told him I had not much occasion or desire; yet at some time or other, perhaps I might have; but when I had, I would ask him but once, and if he then denied me, I would ask him no more.

After we were come back from Newgate, I had a desire to go there again, to visit my friends who were prisoners there, more especially my dear friend, and father in Christ, Edward Burrough, who was then a prisoner, with many Friends more, in that part of Newgate which was then called justice hall. Whereupon the porter coming in my way, I asked him to let me go out for an hour or two, to see some friends of mine that evening.

He to enhance the kindness, made it a matter of some difficulty, and would have me stay till another night. I told him I would be at a word with him; for as I had told him before, that if he denied me, I would ask him no more; so he should find I would keep to it.

He was no sooner gone out of my sight, but I espied his master crossing the court. Wherefore stepping to him, I asked him if he was willing to let me go out for a little while, to see some friends of mine that evening. 'Yes,' said he, 'very willing;' and thereupon away walked I to Newgate, where having spent the evening among Friends, I returned in good time.

Under this easy restraint we lay, till the court sat at the Old-bailey again; and then, whether it was that the heat of the storm was somewhat abated, or by what other means Providence wrought it, I know not; we were called to the bar, and without further question discharged.

Whereupon we returned to Bridewell again, and having raised some monies among us, and therewith gratified both the master and his porter for their kindness to us, we spent some time in a solemn meeting, to return our thankful acknowledgment to the Lord, both for his preservation of us in prison, and deliverance of us out of it; and then taking a solemn farewell of each other, we departed with bag and baggage. And I took care to return my hammock to the owner, with due acknowledgment of his great kindness in lending it me.

Being now at liberty, I visited more generally my friends that were still in prison, and more particularly my friend and benefactor, William Penington, at his house, and then went to wait upon my master Milton. With whom yet I could not propose to enter upon my intermitted studies, until I had been in Buckinghamshire, to visit my worthy friends Isaac Penington and his virtuous wife, with other Friends

in that country.

There therefore I betook myself, and the weather being frosty, and the ways, by that means, clean and good, I walked it through in a day, and was received by my friends there with such demonstration of hearty kindness, as made my journey very easy to me. I had spent in my imprisonment that twenty shillings which I had received of William Penington; and twenty of the forty which had been sent me from Mary Penington, and had the remainder then about me. That therefore I now returned to her, with due acknowledgment of her husband's and her great care of me, and liberality to me in the time of my need. She would have had me kept it. But I begged her to accept it from me again, since it was the redundancy of their kindness, and the other part had answered the occasion for which it was sent: and my importunity prevailed.

I intended only a visit there, not a continuance; and therefore purposed, after I had staid a few days, to return to my lodging and former course in London; but Providence ordered it otherwise.

Isaac Penington had at that time two sons and one daughter, all then very young; of whom the eldest son, John Penington, and the daughter, Mary, the wife of Daniel Wharley, are yet living at the writing of this. And being himself both skilful and curious in pronunciation, he was very desirous to have them well grounded in the rudiments of the English tongue—to which end he had sent for a man out of Lancashire, whom, upon inquiry, he had heard of, who was undoubtedly the most accurate English teacher that ever I met with, or have heard of. His name was Richard Bradley. But as he pretended no higher than the English tongue, and had led them, by grammar rules to the highest improvement they were capable of in that, he had then taken his leave of them, and was gone up to London to teach an English school of Friends' children there.

This put my friend to a fresh strait. He had sought for a new teacher to instruct his children in the Latin tongue, as the old had done in the English, but had not yet found one. Wherefore, one evening as we sat together by the fire in his bed-chamber, which for lack of health he kept, he asked me, his wife being by, if I would be so kind to him as to stay awhile with him, till he could hear of such a man as he aimed at; and in the mean time enter his children in the rudiments of the Latin tongue.

This question was not more unexpected than surprising to me; and the more, because it seemed directly to thwart my former purpose and undertaking, of endeavouring to improve myself by following my studies with my master Milton, which this would give at least a present diversion from, and for how long I could not foresee.

But the sense I had of the manifold obligations I lay under to these worthy Friends, shut out all reasonings, and disposed my mind to an absolute resignation to their desire, that I might testify my gratitude by a willingness to do them any friendly service that I could be capable of.

And though I questioned my ability to carry on that work, to its due height and proportion; yet as that was not proposed, but an initiation only by accident into grammar, I consented to the proposal, as a

present expedient, till a more qualified person should be found, without further treaty or mention of terms between us, than that of mutual friendship. And to render this digression from my own studies the less uneasy to my mind, I recollected, and often thought of that rule in Lilly;

*He that the unlearned does teach, may
quickly be
More learned than they, though most
unlearned he.*

With this consideration I undertook this province, and left it not until I married, which was not till the year 1669, nearly seven years from the time I came there. In which time, having the use of my friend's books, as well as of mine own, I spent my leisure hours much in reading, not without some improvement to myself in my private studies; which, with the good success of my labours bestowed on the children, and the agreeableness of conversation which I found in the family, rendered my undertaking more satisfactory, and my stay there more easy to me.

But, alas! not many days had I been there, before we were almost overwhelmed with sorrow, for the unexpected loss of Edward Burrough, who was justly very dear to us all. This not only good, but great good man, by a long and close confinement in Newgate, through the cruel malice and malicious cruelty of Richard Brown, was taken away by hasty death, to the unutterable grief of very many, and unspeakable loss to the church of Christ in general.

The particular obligation I had to him, as the immediate instrument of my conviction, and high affection for him resulting therefrom, did so deeply affect my mind, that it was some time before my passion could prevail to express itself in words; so true I found that of the tragedian.

*Light griefs break forth, and easily get vent,
Great ones are through amazement closely pent.*

1663.—I went on in my new province, instructing my little pupils in the rudiments of the Latin tongue, to the mutual satisfaction of both their parents and myself. As soon as I had gotten a little money in my pocket, which as a premium without compact I received from them, I took the first opportunity to return to my friend William Penington the money which he had so kindly furnished me with in my need, at the time of my imprisonment in Bridewell, with a due acknowledgment of my obligation to him for it. He was not at all forward to receive it, so that I was made to press it upon him.

While I remained in this family, various suspicions arose in the minds of some concerning me, with respect to Mary Penington's fair daughter Guli. For she having now arrived to a marriageable age, and being in all respects a very desirable woman, whether regard was had to her outward person, which lacked nothing to render her beautiful; or to the endowments of her mind, which were every way extraordinary, and highly obliging; or to her outward fortune, which was fair, and which with some has not the last, nor the least place in consideration,—she was openly and secretly sought, and solicited by

many, and some of them almost of every rank and condition; good and bad, rich and poor, friend and foe. To whom, in their respective turns, till he at length came, for whom she was reserved— she carried herself with so much evenness of temper, such courteous freedom, guarded with the strictest modesty, that as it gave encouragement or ground of hopes to none, so neither did it administer any matter of offence or just cause of complaint to any.

But such as were thus either engaged for themselves, or desirous to make themselves advocates for others, could not, I observed, but look upon me with an eye of jealousy and fear that I would improve the opportunities I had, by frequent and familiar conversation with her, to my own advantage, in working myself into her good opinion and favour, to the ruin of their pretences.

According, therefore, to the several kinds and degrees of their fears of me, they suggested to her parents their ill surmises against me.

Some stuck not to question the sincerity of my intentions in coming at first among the Quakers; urging, with a Why may not it be so? That the desire and hopes of obtaining, by that means, so fair a fortune, might be the prime and chief inducement to me, to thrust myself amongst that people. But this surmise could find no place with those worthy Friends, her step-father and her mother, who, besides the clear sense and sound judgment they had in themselves, knew very well upon what terms I came among them—how strait and hard the passage was to me — how contrary to all worldly interest, which lay fair another way, how much I had suffered from my father for it, and how regardless I had been of attempting or seeking any thing of that nature, in these three or four years that I had been amongst them.

Some others, measuring me by the propensity of their own inclinations, concluded I would steal her, run away with her, and marry her. Which they thought I might be the more easily induced to do, from the advantageous opportunities I frequently had of riding and walking abroad with her, by night as well as by day, without any other company than her maid. For so great indeed was the confidence that her mother had in me, that she thought her daughter safe if I was with her, even from the plots and designs that others had upon her. And so honourable were the thoughts she entertained concerning me, that they would not permit her to admit a suspicion that I could be capable of so much baseness, as to betray the trust she with so great freedom reposed in me.

I was not ignorant of the various fears which filled the jealous heads of some concerning me, neither was I so stupid, nor so divested of all humanity, as not to be sensible of the real and innate worth and virtue which adorned that excellent dame, and attracted the eyes and hearts of so many, with the greatest importunity to seek and solicit her; nor was I so devoid of natural heat, as not to feel some sparklings of desire as well as others. But the force of truth and sense of honour, suppressed whatever would have risen beyond the bounds of fair and virtuous friendship. For I easily foresaw, that if I should attempt any thing in a dishonourable way, by force or fraud upon her, I should have thereby brought a wound upon my own soul, a foul scandal upon my religious profession, and an infamous stain upon my honour; either of which was far more dear to me than my life. Wherefore, having

observed how some others had befooled themselves by misconstruing her common kindness, expressed in an innocent, open, free and familiar conversation, springing from the abundant affability, courtesy and sweetness of her natural temper, to be the effect of a singular regard and peculiar affection to them, I resolved to shun the rock on which I had seen so many run and split, and governed myself in a free, yet respectful carriage towards her, that I thereby both preserved a fair reputation with my friends, and enjoyed as much of her favour and kindness, in a virtuous and firm friendship, as was fit for her to show, or for me to seek.

About this time, my father resolving to sell his estate, and having reserved for his own use such parts of his household goods as he thought fit—not willing to take upon himself the trouble of selling the rest, gave them to me. Whereupon I went down to Crowell, and having before given notice there and thereabouts, that I intended a public sale of them, I sold them, and thereby put some money into my pocket. Yet I sold such things only as I judged useful; leaving the pictures and armour, of which there was some store there, unsold.

Not long after this, my father sent for me to come to him at London about some business; which, when I came there, I understood was to join with him in the sale of his estate, which the purchaser required for his own satisfaction and safety, I being then the next heir to it in law. And although I might probably have made some advantageous terms for myself by standing off; yet when I was satisfied by counsel, that there was no entail upon it, or right of reversion to me, but that he might lawfully dispose of it as he pleased, I readily joined with him in the sale, without asking or having the least gratuity or compensation; no, not so much as the fee I had given to counsel, to secure me from any danger in doing it.

Some time before this, a very severe law was made against the Quakers by name, prohibiting our meetings under the penalty of five pounds for the first offence so called, ten pounds for the second, and banishment for the third; with pain of felony for escaping or returning without license. This law was looked upon, to have been procured by the bishops, in order to bring us to a conformity to their way of worship.

1665.—And no sooner was it made, but it was put in execution with great severity. The sense whereof working strongly on my spirit, made me cry earnestly to the Lord, that he would arise and set up his righteous judgment in the earth, for the deliverance of his people from all their enemies, both inward and outward.

Although the storm, raised by the act for banishment, fell with the greatest weight and force upon some other parts—as at London, Hertford, etc., yet we were not, in Buckinghamshire, wholly exempted therefrom, for a part of the shower reached us also.

A friend of Amersham, whose name was Edward Perot, or Parret, departing this life, and notice being given that his body would be buried there on such a day, which was the first-day of the fifth month 1665, the Friends of the adjacent parts of the country resorted pretty generally to the burial; so that there was a fair appearance of Friends and neighbours, the deceased having been well-beloved by both.

After we had spent some time together in the house, Morgan Watkins, who at that time happened to be at Isaac Penington's, being with us, the body was taken up and bore on Friends' shoulders along the street, in order to be carried to the burying ground, which was at the town's end, being part of an orchard belonging to the deceased, which he in his life-time had appointed for that service.

It so happened that one Ambrose Bennett, a barrister at law and a justice of the peace for that county, riding through the town that morning in his way to Aylesbury, was by some ill-disposed person or other, informed that there was a Quaker to be buried there that day, and that most of the Quakers in the country were come there to the burial.

Upon this he set up his horses and staid; and when we, not knowing any thing of his design against us, went innocently forward to perform our Christian duty for the interment of our friend,—he rushed out of his inn upon us, with the constables and a rabble of rude fellows, whom he had gathered together, and having his drawn sword in his hand, struck one of the foremost of the bearers with it, commanding them to set down the coffin. But the Friend who was so stricken, whose name was Thomas Dell, being more concerned for the safety of the dead body than his own, lest it should fall from his shoulder, and any indecency thereupon follow, held the coffin fast; which the justice observing, and being enraged that his word, how unjust soever, was not forthwith obeyed, set his hand to the coffin, and with a forcible thrust threw it off from the bearers' shoulders, so that it fell to the ground in the midst of the street, and there we were forced to leave it.

For immediately thereupon the justice giving command for apprehending us, the constables with the rabble fell on us, and drew some, and drove others into the inn, giving thereby an opportunity to the rest to walk away.

Of those that were thus taken, I was one. And being, with many more, put into a room under a guard, we were kept there till another justice, called sir Thomas Clayton, whom justice Bennett had sent for to join with him in committing us, was come. And then, being called forth severally before them, they picked out ten of us, and committed us to Aylesbury jail, for what neither we nor they knew. We were not convicted of having either done or said any thing which the law could take hold of; for they took us up in the open street, the king's highway, not doing any unlawful act, but peaceably carrying and accompanying the corpse of our deceased friend to bury it. Which they would not allow us to do, but caused the body to lie in the open street, and in the cart-way; so that all the travellers that passed by, whether horsemen, coaches, carts, or wagons, were made to break out of the way to go by it, that they might not drive over it, until it was almost night. And then having caused a grave to be made in the unconsecrated part, as is accounted, of that which is called the church-yard, they forcibly took the body from the widow, whose right and property it was, and buried it there.

When the justices had delivered us prisoners to the constable, it being then late in the day, which was the seventh-day of the week, he not willing to go so far as Aylesbury, nine long miles, with us that night, nor to put the town to the charge of keeping us there that night, and the first-day and night following, dismissed us upon our parole to come to him again at a set hour on the second-day morning;

whereupon we all went home to our respective habitations; and coming to him punctually according to promise, were by him, without guard, conducted to the prison.

The jailer, whose name was Nathaniel Birch, had not long before behaved himself very wickedly, with great rudeness and cruelty to some of our friends of the lower side of the county, whom he, combining with the clerk of the peace, whose name was Henry Wells, had contrived to get into his jail; and after they were legally discharged in court, detained them in prison, using great violence and shutting them up close in the common jail among the felons, because they would not give him his unrighteous demand of fees; which they were the more straitened in, from his treacherous dealing with them. And they having through suffering, maintained their freedom, and obtained their liberty, we were the more concerned to keep what they had so hardly gained, and therefore resolved not to make any contract or terms for either chamber rent or fees, but to demand a free prison; which we did.

When we came in, the jailer had ridden out to wait on the judges, who came in that day to begin the assize, and his wife was somewhat at a loss how to deal with us; but being a cunning woman, she treated us with great appearance of courtesy, offering us the choice of all her rooms; and when we asked upon what terms, she still referred us to her husband; telling us she did not doubt but that he would be very reasonable and civil to us. Thus she endeavoured to draw us to take possession of some of her chambers at a venture, and trust to her husband's kind usage. But we, who at the cost of our friends had a proof of his kindness, were too wary to be drawn in by the fair words of a woman; and therefore told her, we would not settle any where till her husband came home, and then would have a free prison where-soever he put us.

Accordingly, walking all together into the court of the prison, in which was a well of very good water, and having beforehand sent to a Friend in the town, a widow woman whose name was Sarah Lambarn, to bring us some bread and cheese, we sat down upon the ground round about the well, and when we had eaten, we drank of the water out of the well.

Our great concern was for our friend Isaac Penington, because of the tenderness of his constitution; but he was so lively in his spirit, and so cheerfully given up to suffer, that he rather encouraged us, than needed any encouragement from us.

In this posture the jailer, when he came home, found us; and having before he came to us consulted his wife, and by her understood on what terms we stood—when he came to us he hid his teeth, and putting on a show of kindness, seemed much troubled that we should sit there abroad, especially his old friend Mr. Penington; and thereupon invited us to come in, and take what rooms in his house we pleased. We asked upon what terms? letting him know withal, that we determined to have a free prison.

He, like the sun and wind in the fable, that strove which of them should take from the traveller his cloak—having, like the wind, tried rough, boisterous, violent means to our friends before, but in vain, resolved now to imitate the sun, and shine as pleasantly as he could upon us. Wherefore he told us we should make the terms ourselves, and be as free as we desired. If we thought fit, when we were

released, to give him any thing, he would thank us for it; and if not he would demand nothing.

Upon these terms we went in and disposed ourselves; some in the dwelling-house, others in the malt-house, where they chose to be.

During the assize we were brought before judge Morton, a sour angry man, who very rudely reviled us, but would not hear either us or the cause; but referred the matter to the two justices who had committed us.

They, when the assize was ended, sent for us to be brought before them at their inn, and fined us, as I remember, six shillings and eight pence a-piece; which we not consenting to pay, they committed us to prison again for one month from that time, on the act for banishment.

When we had lain there that month, I with another went to the jailer to demand our liberty; which he readily granted, telling us the door should be open when we pleased to go.

This answer of his I reported to the rest of my friends there, and thereupon we raised among us a small sum of money, which they put into my hand for the jailer. Taking another friend with me, I went to him with the money, and reminding him of the terms upon which we accepted the use of his rooms, I told him that although we could not pay chamber-rent or fees, yet inasmuch as he had now been civil to us, we were willing to acknowledge it by a small token, and thereupon gave him the money. He putting it into his pocket, said, 'I thank you and your friends for it; and to let you see I take it as a gift, not a debt, I will not look on it to see how much it is.' The prison door being then set open for us, we went out, and departed to our respective homes.

Some little time before I went to Aylesbury prison, I was desired by my quondam master Milton, to take a house for him in the neighbourhood where I dwelt, that he might go out of the city, for the safety of himself and his family, the pestilence then growing hot in London. I took a pretty box for him in Giles-Chalfont, a mile from me, of which I gave him notice, and intended to have waited on him, and seen him well settled in it, but was prevented by that imprisonment.

But now being released and returned home, I soon made a visit to him, to welcome him into the country.

After some common discourse had passed between us, he called for a manuscript of his; which being brought, he delivered it to me, bidding me take it home with me, and read it at my leisure; and when I had so done, return it to him with my judgment thereupon.

When I came home, and had set myself to read it, I found it was that excellent poem, which he entitled *Paradise Lost*. After I had, with the best attention, read it through, I made him another visit, and returned him his book, with due acknowledgment of the favour he had done me in communicating it to me. He asked me how I liked it, and what I thought of it? which I modestly but freely told him; and after some further discourse about it, I pleasantly said to him. You have said much here of *Paradise lost*;

but what have you to say of Paradise found? He made me no answer, but sat some time in a muse; then broke off that discourse and fell upon another subject.

After the sickness was over and the city well cleansed and become safely habitable again, he returned there. And when afterwards I went to wait on him there, which I seldom failed of doing whenever my occasions drew me to London, he showed me his second poem, called Paradise Regained; and in a pleasant tone said to me, 'this is owing to you; for you put it into my head by the question you put to me at Chalfont; which before I had not thought of.' But from this digression I return to the family I then lived in.

We had not been long at home, about a month perhaps, before Isaac Penington was taken out of his house in an arbitrary manner by military force, and carried prisoner to Aylesbury jail again; where he lay three quarters of a year, with great hazard of his life, it being the sickness year, and the plague being not only in the town but in the jail.

Meanwhile his wife and family were turned out of his house, called the Grange at Peter's-Chalfont, by them who had seized upon his estate; and the family being by that means broken up, some went one way, others another.

Mary Penington herself, with her younger children, went down to her husband at Aylesbury. Guli, with her maid, went to Bristol, to see her former maid Anne Hersent, who was married to a merchant of that city, whose name was Thomas Biss; and I went to Aylesbury with the children; but not finding the place agreeable to my health, I soon left it and returning to Chalfont, took a lodging, and was dieted in the house of a friendly man; and after some time, went to Bristol to conduct Guli home.

Meanwhile Mary Penington took lodgings in a farm-house called Bottrels, in the parish of Giles-Chalfont, where, when we returned from Bristol, we found her.

We had been there but a very little time, before I was sent to prison again upon this occasion. There was in those times, a meeting once a month at the house of George Salter, a Friend of Hedgerly, to which we sometimes went; and Morgan Watkins being with us, he and I, with Guli and her maid, and one Judith Parker, wife of Dr. Parker, one of the college of physicians at London, with a maiden daughter of theirs, neither of whom were Quakers, but as acquaintance of Mary Penington, were with her on a visit, walking over to that meeting, it being about the middle of the first month, and the weather good.

This place was about a mile from the house of Ambrose Bennett, the justice, who the summer before had sent me and some other Friends to Aylesbury prison, from the burial of Edward Parret of Amer-sham; and he, by what means I know not, getting notice, not only of the meeting, but as was supposed, of our being there, came himself to it; and as he came, picked up a slack-wood stick, big enough to have knocked any man down, and brought it with him hidden under his cloak.

Being come to the house, he stood for a while without the door and out of sight, listening to hear what

was said, for Morgan was then speaking in the meeting. But certainly he heard very imperfectly, if it was true which we heard he said afterwards among his companions, as an argument that Morgan was a Jesuit, namely: That in his preaching he trolled over his Latin as fluently as ever he heard any one; whereas Morgan, good man, was better versed in Welch than in Latin, which, I suppose he had never learned; I am sure he did not understand it.

When this martial justice, who at Amersham had with his drawn sword struck an unarmed man, who he knew would not strike again, had now stood some time abroad, on a sudden he rushed in among us, with the stackwood stick held up in his hand ready to strike, crying out, 'Make way there;' and an ancient woman not getting soon enough out of his way, he struck her with the stick a hard blow over the breast. Then pressing through the crowd to the place where Morgan stood, he plucked him from there, and caused so great a disorder in the room, that it broke the meeting up; yet would not the people go away or disperse themselves, but tarried to see what the issue would be.

Then taking pen and paper, he sat down at the table among us, and asked several of us our names, which we gave and he set down in writing.

Amongst others, he asked Judith Parker, the doctor's wife, what her name was; which she readily gave; and from there taking occasion to discourse him, she so over-mastered him by clear reason, delivered in fine language, that he, glad to be rid of her, struck out her name and dismissed her; yet she did not remove, but kept her place amongst us.

When he had taken what number of names he thought fit, he singled out half a dozen, whereof Morgan was one, I another, one man more, and three women, of whom the woman of the house was one, although her husband then was, and for several years before had been, a prisoner in the Fleet for tithes, and had nobody to take care of his family and business but her his wife.

Us six he committed to Aylesbury jail. Which when the doctor's wife heard him read to the constable, she attacked him again, and having put him in mind that it was a sickly time, and that the pestilence was reported to be in that place, she in handsome terms, desired him to consider in time, how he would answer the cry of our blood, if by his sending us to be shut up in an infected place, we should lose our lives there? This made him alter his purpose, and by a new mittimus he sent us to the house of correction at Wiccomb. And although he committed us upon the act for banishment, which limited a certain time for imprisonment; yet he in his mittimus, limited no time, but ordered us to be kept till we should be delivered by due course of law; so little regardful was he, though a lawyer, of keeping to the letter of the law.

We were committed on the 13th day of the month called March 1665-6, and were kept close prisoners there till the 7th day of the month called June 1666, which was some days above twelve weeks, and much above what the act required.

Then we were sent for to the justice's house, and the rest being released, Morgan Watkins and I were

required to find sureties for our appearance at the next assize; which we refusing to do, were committed a-new to our old prison, the house of correction at Wiccomb, there to lie until the next assizes: Morgan being in this second mittimus, represented as a notorious offender in preaching, and I as being upon the second conviction, in order to banishment. There we lay till the 25th day of the same month; and then, by the favour of the earl of Ancram, being brought before him at his house, we were discharged from the prison, upon our promise to appear, if at liberty and in health, at the assizes. Which we did, and were there discharged by proclamation.

During my imprisonment in this prison, I betook myself for an employment, to making of nets for kitchen service, to boil herbs, etc., in; which trade I learned of Morgan Watkins, and selling some, and giving others, I pretty well stocked the Friends of that county with them.

Though in that confinement I was not very well suited with company for conversation, Morgan's natural temper not being very agreeable to mine; yet we kept a fair and brotherly correspondence, as became friends, prison-fellows and bed-fellows, which we were. And indeed, it was a good time, I think, to us all, for I found it so to me; the Lord being graciously pleased to visit my soul with the refreshing dews of his divine life, whereby my spirit was more and more quickened to him, and Truth gained ground in me over the temptations and snares of the enemy; which frequently raised in my heart thanksgivings and praises unto the Lord. And at one time more especially, the sense I had of the prosperity of Truth, and the spreading thereof, filling my heart with abundant joy, made my cup overflow.

After we had been discharged at the assizes, I returned to Isaac Penington's family at Dottrel's in Chalfont, and as I remember, Morgan Watkins with me, leaving Isaac Penington a prisoner in Aylesbury jail.

The lodgings we had in this farm house, Bottrel's, proving too strait and inconvenient for the family, I took larger and better lodgings for them in Berrie-house at Amersham, where we went at the time called Michaelmas, having spent the summer at the other place.

1667.—Some time after was that memorable meeting appointed to be holden at London, through a divine opening in the motion of life, in that eminent servant and prophet of God, George Fox, for the restoring and bringing in again those who had gone out from Truth, and the holy unity of Friends therein, by the means and ministry of John Perrot.

This man came pretty early amongst Friends, and too early took upon him the ministerial office; and being, though little in person, yet great in opinion of himself, nothing less would serve him than to go and convert the Pope. In order whereto, he having a better man than himself, John Luff, to accompany him, travelled to Rome, where they had not been long, before they were taken up and clapped into prison; Luff, as I remember, was put in the Inquisition, and Perrot in their bedlam or hospital for madmen.

Luff died in prison, not without well-grounded suspicion of being murdered there, but Perrot lay there some time, and now and then sent over an epistle to be printed here, written in such an affected and fantastic style, as might have induced an indifferent reader to believe they had suited the place of his confinement to his condition.

After some time, through the mediation of Friends—who hoped better of him than he proved—with some person of note and interest there, he was released and came back for England. And the report of his great sufferings there, far greater in report than in reality, joined with a singular show of sanctity, so far opened the hearts of many tender and compassionate Friends towards him, that it gave him the advantage of insinuating himself into their affections and esteem, and made way for the more ready propagation of that peculiar error of his, of keeping on the hat in time of prayer, as well public as private, unless they had an immediate motion at that time to put it off.

Now although I had not the least acquaintance with this man, not having ever exchanged a word with him, though I knew him by sight; nor had I any esteem of him for either his natural parts, or ministerial gift, but rather a dislike of his aspect, preaching and way of writing; yet this error of his being broached in the time of my infancy and weakness of judgment as to Truth, while I lived privately in London, and had little converse with Friends,—I, amongst the many who were caught in the snare, was taken with the notion, as what then seemed to my weak understanding, suitable to the doctrine of a spiritual dispensation. And the matter coming to warm debates, both in words and writing, I, in a misguided zeal, was ready to have entered the lists of contention about it, not then seeing what spirit it proceeded from and was managed by, nor foreseeing the disorder and confusion in worship which must naturally attend it.

But as I had no evil intention or sinister end in engaging in it, but was simply betrayed by the specious pretence and show of greater spirituality, the Lord, in tender compassion to my soul, was graciously pleased to open my understanding, and give me a clear sight of the enemy's design in this work, and drew me off from the practice of it, and to bear testimony against it as occasion offered.

But when that solemn meeting was appointed at London, for a travail in spirit on behalf of those who had thus gone out, that they might rightly return, and be sensibly received into the unity of the body again, my spirit rejoiced, and with gladness of heart I went to it, as did many more of both city and country, and with great simplicity and humility of mind, did honestly and openly acknowledge our outgoings, and take condemnation and shame to ourselves. And some that lived at too remote distance, in this nation as well as beyond the seas, upon notice given of that meeting, and the intended service of it, did the like by writing, in letters directed to and openly read in the meeting, which for that purpose was continued many days.

Thus, in the motion of life, were the healing waters stirred, and many, through the virtuous power thereof, restored to soundness, and indeed not many were lost. And though most of these who thus returned, were such as with myself had before renounced the error, and forsaken the practice; yet did we sensibly find, that forsaking without confessing, in case of public scandal, was not sufficient; but

that an open acknowledgment of open offences, as well as forsaking them, was necessary to the obtaining complete remission.

1668.—Not long after this, George Fox was moved of the Lord to travel through the country, from county to county, to advise and encourage Friends to set up monthly and quarterly meetings, for the better ordering the affairs of the church, in taking care of the poor, and exercising a true gospel discipline, for a due dealing with any that might walk disorderly under our name, and to see that such as should marry among us, did act fairly and clearly in that respect.

When he came into this county, I was one of the many Friends that were with him at the meeting for that purpose. And afterwards I travelled with Guli and her maid, into the west of England to meet him there, and to visit Friends in those parts; and we went as far as Topsham in Devonshire before we found him. He had been in Cornwall, and was then returning, and came in unexpectedly at Topsham, where we then were providing, if he had not then come there, to have gone that day towards Cornwall. But after he was come to us, we turned back with him through Devonshire, Somersetshire, and Dorsetshire, having generally very good meetings where he was; and the work he was chiefly concerned in, went on very prosperously and well, without any opposition or dislike; save that in the general meeting of Friends in Dorsetshire, a quarrelsome man who had gone out from Friends in John Perrot's business, and had not come rightly in again, but continued in the practice of keeping on his hat in time of prayer, to the great trouble and offence of Friends, began to find fault and raise disputes, which occasioned some interruption and disturbance.

Not only George, and Alexander Parker who was with him, but several of the ancient Friends of that county, endeavoured to quiet that troublesome man, and make him sensible of his error; but his unruly spirit would still be opposing what was said unto him, and justifying himself in that practice. This brought a great weight and exercise upon me, who sat at a distance in the outward part of the meeting; and after I had for some time bore the burden thereof, I stood up in the constraining power of the Lord, and in great tenderness of spirit declared unto the meeting, and to that person more particularly, how it had been with me in that respect; how I had been betrayed into that wrong practice—how strong I had been therein, and how the Lord had been graciously pleased to show me the evil thereof, and recover me out of it.

This coming unexpectedly from me, a young man and a stranger, and one who had not intermeddled with the business of the meeting, had that effect upon the faultfinder, that if it did not satisfy him, it did at least silence him, and made him for the present sink down and be still, without giving any further disturbance to the meeting. And the Friends were well pleased with this unlooked for testimony from me; and I was glad that I had that opportunity to confess to the truth, and to acknowledge once more, in so public a manner, the mercy and goodness of the Lord to me therein.

By the time we came back from this journey, the summer was pretty far gone, and the following winter I spent with the children of the family as before, without any remarkable alteration in my circumstances, until the next spring; when I found in myself a disposition of mind to change my single life for

a married state.

1669.—I had always entertained so high a regard for marriage, as it was a divine institution, that I held it not lawful to make it a sort of political trade to rise in the world by. And therefore as I could not but, in my judgment, blame such as I found made it their business to hunt after, and endeavour to gain those who were accounted great fortunes; not so much regarding what she is, as what she has, but making wealth the chief, if not the only thing they aimed at; so I resolved to avoid, in my own practice, that course; and how much soever my condition might have prompted me, as well as others, to seek advantage that way, never to engage on the account of riches, nor at all to marry, till judicious affection drew me to it, which I now began to feel at work in my breast.

The object of this affection was a Friend, whose name was Mary Ellis, whom for many years I had had an acquaintance with, in the way of common friendship only; and in whom I thought I then saw those fair prints of truth and solid virtue, which I afterwards found in an eminent degree in her; but what her condition in the world was, as to estate, I was wholly a stranger to, nor desired to know.

I had once, a year or two before, had an opportunity to do her a small piece of service, in which she needed some assistance; wherein I acted with all sincerity and freedom of mind, not expecting or desiring any advantage by her, or reward from her, being very well satisfied in the act itself, that I had served a friend and helped the helpless.

That little interchange of common kindness between us, ended without the least thought, I am verily persuaded, on her part, well assured on my own, of any other or further relation than that of free and fair friendship; nor did it, at that time, lead us into any closer conversation, or more intimate acquaintance one with the other, than had been before.

But some time, and that a good while after, I found my heart secretly drawn and inclining towards her; yet was I not hasty in proposing, but waited to feel a satisfactory settlement of mind therein, before I made any step thereto.

After some time, I took an opportunity to open my mind therein to my much honoured friends, Isaac and Mary Penington, who then stood in the place or stead of parents to me. They having solemnly weighed the matter, expressed their unity therewith; and indeed their approbation thereof was no small confirmation to me therein. Yet took I further deliberation, often retiring in spirit to the Lord, and crying to him for direction, before I addressed myself to her. At length, as I was setting all alone waiting upon the Lord for counsel and guidance in this in itself, and to me so important affair, I felt a word sweetly arise in me, as if I had heard a voice which said, Go and prevail. And faith springing in my heart with the word, I immediately arose and went nothing doubting.

When I was come to her lodgings, which were about a mile from me, her maid told me she was in her chamber; for having been under some indisposition of body, which had obliged her to keep her chamber, she had not yet left it. Wherefore I desired the maid to acquaint her mistress, that I was come

to give her a visit; whereupon I was invited to go up to her. And after some little time spent in common conversation, feeling my spirit weightily concerned, I solemnly opened my mind unto her, with respect to the particular business I came about; which I soon perceived was a great surprisal to her, for she had taken in an apprehension, as others also had done, that my eye had been fixed elsewhere and nearer home.

I used not many words to her; but I felt a divine power went along with the words and fixed the matter expressed by them so fast in her breast, that as she afterwards acknowledged to me she could not shut it out.

I made at that time but a short visit. For having told her, I did not expect an answer from her now, but desired she would, in the most solemn manner, weigh the proposal made, and in due time give me such an answer thereunto, as the Lord should give her; I took my leave of her and departed, leaving the issue to the Lord.

I had a journey then at hand, which I foresaw would take me up about two weeks time. Wherefore, the day before I was to set out, I went to visit her again, to acquaint her with my journey and excuse my absence; not yet pressing her for an answer, but assuring her, that I felt in myself an increase of affection to her, and hoped to receive a suitable return from her in the Lord's time; to whom, in the mean time, I committed both her, myself, and the concern between us. And indeed, I found at my return, that I could not have left it in a better hand; for the Lord had been my advocate in my absence, and had so far answered all her objections, that when I came to her again, she rather acquainted me with them than urged them.

From that time forwards we entertained each other with affectionate kindness in order to marriage; which yet we did not hasten to, but went on deliberately. Neither did I use those vulgar ways of courtship, by making frequent and rich presents; not only for that my outward condition would not comport with the expense, but because I liked not to obtain by such means; but preferred an unbribed affection.

While this affair stood thus with me, I had occasion to take another journey into Kent and Sussex; which yet I would not mention here, but for a particular accident which befell me on the way.

The occasion of this journey was this. Mary Penington's daughter Guli intending to go to her uncle Springett's in Sussex, and from there amongst her tenants, her mother desired me to accompany her, and assist her in her business with her tenants.

We tarried at London the first night, and set out next morning on the Tunbridge road, and Seven-Oak lying in our way, we put in there to bait: but truly, we had much ado to get either provisions or room for ourselves or our horses, the house was so filled with guests, and those not of the better sort. For the duke of York being, as we were told, on the road that day for the Wells, many of his guards, and the meaner sort of his retinue, had nearly filled all the inns there.

I left John Gigger, who waited on Guli in this journey, and was afterwards her servant, to take care for

the horses, while I did the like, as well as I could for her. I got a little room to put her into, and having shut her into it, went to see what relief the kitchen would afford us; and with much ado, by praying hard and paying dear, I got a small joint of meat from the spit, which served rather to stay than satisfy our stomachs, for we were pretty sharp set.

After this short repast, being weary of our quarters, we quickly mounted and took the road again, willing to hasten from a place where we found nothing but rudeness; for the roysters, who at that time swarmed there, besides the damning oaths they belched out at one another, looked very sourly on us, as if they grudged us both the horses we rode and the clothes we wore.

A knot of these soon followed us, designing, as we afterwards found, to put an abuse upon us, and make themselves sport with us. We had a spot of fine smooth sandy way, whereon the horses trod so softly, that we heard them not till one of them was upon us. I was then riding abreast with Guli, and discoursing with her; when on a sudden hearing a little noise, and turning my eye that way, I saw a horseman coming up on the further side of her horse, having his left arm stretched out, just ready to take her about the waist, and pluck her off backwards from her own horse, to lay her before him upon his. I had but just time to thrust forth my stick between him and her, and bid him stand off; and at the same time reining my horse, to let hers go before me, thrust in between her and him; and being better mounted than he, my horse run him off.

But his horse, though weaker than mine, being nimble, he slipped by me, and got up to her on the near side, endeavouring to offer abuse to her: to prevent which, I thrust in upon him again, and in our jostling, we drove her horse quite out of the way, and almost into the next hedge.

While we were thus contending, I heard a noise of loud laughter behind us, and turning my head that way, I saw three or four horsemen more, who could scarce sit their horses for laughing, to see the sport their companion made with us. From there I saw it was a plot laid, and that this rude fellow was not to be dallied with; wherefore I bestirred myself the more to keep him off, admonishing him to take warning in time, and give over his abusiveness, lest he repented too late. He had in his hand a short thick truncheon, which he held up at me; and on which laying hold with a strong grip, I suddenly wrenched it out of his hand, and threw it at as far a distance behind me as I could.

While he rode back to fetch his truncheon, I called up honest John Gigger, who was indeed a right honest man, and of a temper so thoroughly peaceable, that he had not hitherto put in at all. But now I roused him, and bid him ride so close up to his mistress's horse on the further side, that no horse might thrust in between, and I would endeavour to guard the near side. But he, good man, not thinking it perhaps decent enough for him to ride so near his mistress, left room enough for another to ride between. And indeed, so soon as the ruffian had recovered his truncheon, he came up directly there, and had thrust in again, had not I, by a nimble turn, chopped in upon him and kept him at a bay.

I then told him, I had hitherto spared him; but wished him not to provoke me further. This I said with such a tone, as bespoke a high resentment of the abuse put upon us, and withal pressed so close upon

him with my horse, that I allowed him not to come up any more to Guli.

This his companions, who kept an equal distance behind us, both heard and saw, and thereupon two of them advancing came up to us. I then thought I might likely have my hands full, but Providence turned it otherwise.

For they, seeing the contest rise so high, and probably fearing it would rise higher, not knowing where it might stop, came in to part us; which they did, by taking him away—one of them leading his horse by the bridle, and the other driving him on with his whip, and so carried him off.

One of their company staid yet behind. And it so happening that a great shower just then fell, we betook ourselves for shelter to a thick and well-spread oak, which stood hard by. There also came that other person, who wore the duke's livery; and while we put on our defensive garments against the weather, which then set in to be wet, he took the opportunity to discourse with me about the man that had been so rude to us, endeavouring to excuse him, by alleging that he had drunk a little too liberally. I let him know, that one vice would not excuse another; that although but one of them was actually concerned in the abuse, yet both he and the rest of them were abettors of it, and accessaries to it; that I was not ignorant whose livery they wore, and was well assured their lord would not maintain them in committing such outrages upon travellers on the road, to our injury and his dishonour; that I understood the duke was coming down, and that they might expect to be called to an account for this rude action.

He then begged hard that we would pass by the offence, and make no complaint to their lord; for he knew, he said, the duke would be very severe, and it would be the utter ruin of the young man. When he had said what he could, he went off before us, without any ground given him to expect favour; and when we had fitted ourselves for the weather, we followed after at our own pace.

When we came to Tunbridge, I set John Gigger foremost, bidding him lead on briskly through the town—and placing Guli in the middle, I came close up after her, that I might both observe and interpose, if any fresh abuse should be offered her. We were expected, I perceived; for though it rained very hard, the street was thronged with men, who looked very earnestly on us, but did not put any affront upon us.

We had a good way to ride beyond Tunbridge, and beyond the Wells, in by-ways among the woods, and were the later for the hindrance we had on the way. And when, being come to Harbert Springett's house, Guli acquainted her uncle what danger and trouble she had gone through on the way; he resented it so highly, that he would have had the persons prosecuted for it. But, since Providence had interposed, and so well preserved and delivered her, she chose to pass by the offence.

When Guli had finished the business she went upon, we returned home, and I delivered her safe to her glad mother. From that time forward, I continued my visits to my best beloved friend until we married, which was on the 28th day of the eighth month called October, in the year 1669. We took each other in a select meeting of the ancient and grave Friends of that country, holden in a Friend's house, where in those times, not only the monthly meeting for business, but the public meeting for worship, was some-

times kept. A very solemn meeting it was, and in a weighty frame of spirit we were, in which we sensibly felt the Lord with us and joining us; the sense whereof remained with us all our life-time, and was of good service, and very comfortable to us on all occasions.

My next care after marriage, was to secure my wife what monies she had, and with herself bestowed upon me. For I held it would be an abominable crime in me, and savour of the highest ingratitude, if I, though but through negligence, should leave room for my father, in case I should be taken away suddenly, to break in upon her estate, and deprive her of any part of that which had been and ought to be her own. Wherefore with the first opportunity, as I remember, the very next day, and before I knew particularly what she had, I made my will, and thereby secured to her whatever I was possessed of, as well all that which she brought either in monies, or in goods, as that little which I had before I married her; which indeed was but little, yet more, [by all that little] than I had ever given her ground to expect with me.

She had indeed been advised by some of her relations, to secure before marriage some part at least, of what she had, to be at her own disposal. Which, though perhaps not wholly free from some tincture of self-interest in the proposer, was not in itself the worst of counsel. But the worthiness of her mind, and the sense of the ground on which she received me, would not permit her to entertain any suspicion of me; and this laid on me the greater obligation, in point of gratitude as well as of justice, to regard and secure her—which I did.

I had not been long married, before I was solicited by my dear friends Isaac and Mary Penington, and her daughter Guli, to take a journey into Kent and Sussex, to accompt with their tenants, and overlook their estates in those counties, which, before I was married, I had had the care of; and accordingly I undertook the journey, though in the depth of winter.

My travels into those parts were the more irksome to me, from the solitariness I underwent, and lack of suitable society. For my business lying among the tenants, who were a rustic sort of people, of various persuasions and humours, but not Friends, I had little opportunity of conversing with Friends; though I contrived to be with them as much as I could, especially on the first-day of the week.

But that which made my present journey more heavy to me, was a sorrowful exercise which was newly fallen upon me from my father, harder to be borne than any I had ever met with before.

He had, upon my first acquainting him with my inclination to marry, and to whom, not only very much approved the match, but voluntarily offered, without my either asking or expecting, to give me a handsome portion at present, with assurance of an addition to it hereafter. He not only made this offer to me in private, but came down from London into the country on purpose to be better acquainted with my friend; and did there make the same proposal to her; offering also to give security to any friend or relation of hers for the performance. Which offer she most generously declined, leaving him as free as she found him. But after we were married, notwithstanding such his promise, he wholly declined the performance of it, under pretence of our not being married by the priest and liturgy. This usage and evil

treatment of us thereupon, was a great trouble to me; and when I endeavoured to soften him in the matter, he forbade me speaking to him of it any more, and removed his lodgings that I might not find him.

The grief I conceived on this occasion, was not for any disappointment to myself or to my wife; for neither she nor I had any strict or necessary dependence upon that promise; but my grief was partly for the cause assigned by him, as the ground of it; which was, that our marriage was not by priest or liturgy, and partly for that his lower circumstances in the world, might probably tempt him to find some such, though unwarrantable excuse, to avoid performing his promise.

And surely hard would it have been for my spirit to have borne up under the weight of this exercise, had not the Lord been exceedingly gracious to me, and supported me with the inflowings of his love and life, wherewith he visited my soul in my travel. The sense whereof raised in my heart a thankful remembrance of his manifold kindnesses in his former dealings with me. And in the evening, when I came to my inn, while supper was getting ready, I took my pen, and put into words what had in the day revolved in my thoughts.

As soon as I had despatched the business I went about, I returned home without delay, and to my great comfort found my wife well, and myself very welcome to her; both which I esteemed as great favours.

1670.—Towards the latter part of the summer following, I went into Kent again, and in my passage through London, received the unwelcome news of the loss of a very hopeful youth, who had formerly been under my care for education. It was Isaac Penington, the second son of my worthy friends Isaac and Mary Penington, a child of excellent natural parts, whose great abilities bespoke him likely to be a great man, had he lived to be a man. He was designed to be bred a merchant, and before he was thought ripe enough to be entered thereto, his parents, at somebody's request, gave leave that he might go a voyage to Barbadoes, only to spend a little time, see the place and be somewhat acquainted with the sea, under the care and conduct of a choice friend and sailor, John Grove of London, who was master of a vessel, and traded to that island; and he had a little venture with him, made up by several of his friends, and by me among the rest. He made the voyage there very well, found the watery element agreeable, had his health there, liked the place, was much pleased with his entertainment there, and was returning home with his little cargo, in return for the goods he carried out; when on a sudden, through unwariness, he dropped overboard, and the vessel being under sail with a brisk gale, was irrecoverably lost, notwithstanding the utmost labour, care and diligence of the master and sailors to save him.

This unhappy accident took from the afflicted master all the pleasure of his voyage, and he mourned for the loss of this youth, as if it had been his own, yes, only son; for as he was in himself a man of a worthy mind, so the boy, by his witty and handsome behaviour in general, and respectful carriage towards him in particular, had very much wrought himself into his favour.

As for me, I thought it one of the sharpest strokes I had met with, for I both loved the child very well, and had conceived great hopes of general good from him; and it pierced me the deeper, to think how

deeply it would pierce his afflicted parents.

Sorrow for this disaster was my companion in this journey, and I travelled the roads under great exercise of mind, revolving in my thoughts the manifold accidents, which the life of man was attended with and subject to, and the great uncertainty of all human things. I could find no centre, no firm basis for the mind of man to fix upon, but the divine power and will of the Almighty. This consideration wrought in my spirit a sort of contempt of what supposed happiness or pleasure this world, or the things that are in and of it, can of themselves yield, and raised my contemplation higher.

It was about this time that some bickerings happening between the Baptists, and some of the people called Quakers, in or about High-Wiccomb in Buckinghamshire, occasioned by some reflecting words a Baptist preacher had publicly uttered in one of their meetings there, against the Quakers in general, and William Penn in particular—it came at length to this issue, that a meeting for a public dispute was appointed, to be holden at West-Wiccomb, between Jeremy Ives, who espoused his brother's cause, and William Penn.

To this meeting, it being so near me, I went, rather to countenance the cause, than for any delight I took in such work; for indeed, I have rarely found the advantage equivalent to the trouble and danger arising from those contests. For which cause I would not choose them, though being justly engaged in, I would not refuse them.

The issue of this proved better than I expected. For Ives having undertaken an ill cause, to argue against the divine light and universal grace, conferred by God on all men—when he had spent his stock of arguments, which he brought with him, on that subject, finding his work go on heavily, and the auditory not well satisfied, he stepped down from his seat and departed, with purpose to have broken up the assembly. But, except some few of his party who followed him, the people generally staid, and were the more attentive to what was afterwards delivered amongst them. Ives understanding this, came in again, and in an angry railing manner, expressing his dislike that we all went not away when he did, gave more disgust to the people.

After the meeting was ended, I sent to my friend Isaac Penington by his son and servant, who, though it was late, returned home that evening, a short account of the business in the following distich.

*Truth has prevailed, the enemies did fly:
We are in safety; praise to God on high.*

But both they and we had quickly other work found us; for it soon became a stormy time. The clouds had been long gathering and threatened a tempest. The parliament had sat some time before, and hatched that unaccountable law, which was called the Conventicle Act, if that may be allowed to be called a law, by whomsoever made, which was so directly contrary to the fundamental laws of England, to common justice, equity and right reason, as this manifestly was. For, First, It broke down and overrun the bounds anciently set for the defence and security of Englishmen's lives, liberties and prop-

erties, namely, trial by juries. Instead thereof, directing and authorizing justices of the peace, and that too privately out of sessions, to convict, fine, and by their warrants distrain upon offenders against it; directly contrary to the Great Charter.

Secondly, By that act the informers, who swear for their own advantage, as being thereby entitled to a third part of the fines, were many times concealed, driving on an underhand private trade; so that men might be, and often were convicted and fined, without having any notice or knowledge of it, till the officers came and took away their goods, nor even then could they tell by whose evidence they were convicted. What could be more opposite to common justice than this? which requires that every man should be openly charged, and have his accuser face to face, that he might both answer for himself before he be convicted, and object to the validity of the evidence given against him.

Thirdly, By that act the innocent were punished for the offences of the guilty. If the wife or child was convicted of having been at one of those assemblies, which by that act was adjudged unlawful—the fine was levied on the goods of the husband or father of such wife or child, though he was neither present at such assembly, nor was of the same religious persuasion that they were of, but perhaps an enemy to it.

Fourthly, It was left in the arbitrary pleasure of the justices, to lay half the fine for the house or ground where such assembly was holden, and half the fine for a pretended unknown preacher; and the whole fines of such and so many of the meeters as they should account poor, upon any other or others of the people, who were present at the same meeting, not exceeding a certain limited sum; without any regard to equity or reason. And yet, such blindness does the spirit of persecution bring on men, otherwise sharp sighted enough, that this unlawful, unjust, unequal, unreasonable and unrighteous law took place in almost all places, and was vigorously prosecuted against the meetings of dissenters in general, though the brunt of the storm fell most sharply on the people called Quakers; not that it seemed to be more particularly levelled at them, but that they stood more fair, steady and open, as a butt to receive all the shot that came, while some others found means and freedom to retire to coverts for shelter.

No sooner had the bishops obtained this law, for suppressing all other meetings than their own, but some of the clergy of most ranks, and some others too, who were overmuch bigotted to that party, bestirred themselves with might and main, to find out and encourage the most profligate wretches to turn informers; and to get such persons into parochial offices, as would be most obsequious to their commands, and ready at their beck, to put it into the most rigorous execution. Yet it took not alike in all places; but some were more forward in the work than others, according as the agents, intended to be chiefly employed, had been predisposed to it.

For in some parts of the nation care had been timely taken, by some not of the lowest rank, to choose out some particular persons, men of sharp wit, close countenances, pliant tempers and deep dissimulation, and send them forth among the sectaries, so called; with instructions to thrust themselves into all societies, conform to all or any sort of religious profession, and Proteus-like, to change their shapes and transform themselves from one religious appearance to another, as occasion should require. In a word,

to be all things to all; not that they might win some, but that they might, if possible, ruin all, or at least many.

The drift of this design was, that they who employed them might, by this means, get a full account what number of dissenters' meetings, of every sort, there were in each county, and where kept; what number of persons frequented them and of what ranks; who amongst them were persons of estate, and where they lived; that when they should afterwards have troubled the waters, they might the better know where, with most advantage, to cast their nets.

One of these emissaries, whose post was assigned in this county of Bucks, adventured to thrust himself upon a Friend, under the counterfeit appearance of a Quaker; but being by the Friend suspected and thereupon dismissed unentertained, he was forced to betake himself to an inn or alehouse for accommodation. Long he had not been there, before his unruly nature, not to be long kept under by the curb of a feigned sobriety, broke forth into open profaneness.

“To fuddling now falls he with those whom he found tipping there before; and who but he amongst them!” In him was then made good the proverb, *in vino veritas*; for in his cups he came out with that which was, no doubt, to have been kept a secret. It was to his pot companions that, after his head was somewhat heated with strong liquors, he discovered that he was sent forth by Dr. Mew, the then vice-chancellor of Oxford, on the design before related, and under the protection of justice Morton, a warrant under whose hand and seal he there produced.

Sensible of his error too late, when sleep had restored him to some degree of sense, and discouraged with this ill success of his attempt upon the Quakers, he quickly left that place, and crossing through the country, cast himself among the Baptists, at a meeting which they held in a private place; of which, the over-easy credulity of some who went among them, with whom he had craftily insinuated himself, had given him notice. The entertainment he found amongst them, deserved a better return than he made them. For, having smoothly wrought himself into their good opinion, and cunningly drawn some of them into an unwary openness and freedom of conversation with him, upon the unpleasing subject of the severity of those times, he most villainously impeached one of them, whose name was Headach, a man well reputed amongst his neighbours, of having spoken treasonable words; and thereby brought the man in danger of losing both his estate and life, had not a seasonable discovery of his abominable practices elsewhere, imprinting terror, the effect of guilt, upon him, caused him to fly both out of the court and country, at that very instant of time, when the honest man stood at the bar, ready to be arraigned upon his false accusation.

This his false charge against that Baptist, left him no further room to play the hypocrite in those parts. Off therefore go his cloak and vizor. And now he openly appears in his proper colours to disturb the assemblies of God's people; this being indeed the very end for which the design at first was laid.

But because the law provided that a conviction must be grounded upon the oaths of two witnesses, it was needful for him, in order to the carrying on his intended mischief, to find out an associate, who

might be both sordid enough for such an employment, and vicious enough to be his companion.

This was not an easy task; yet he found out one, who had already given an experiment of his readiness to take other men's goods, being not long before released out of Aylesbury jail, where he very narrowly escaped the gallows for having stolen a cow.

The names of these fellows being yet unknown in that part of the country where they began their work, the former, by the general voice of the country, was called the Trepan; the latter, the Informer, and from the colour of his hair. Red-head. But in a little time the Trepan called himself John Poulter, adding withal, that judge Morton used to call him John for the king; and that the archbishop of Canterbury had given him a deaconry. That his name was indeed John Poulter, the reputed son of one Poulter, a butcher in Salisbury, and that he had long since been there branded for a fellow egregiously wicked and debauched, we were assured by the testimony of a young man then living in Amersham, who was his countryman, and had known him in Salisbury; as well as by a letter from an inhabitant of that place, to whom his course of life had been well known.

His comrade, who for some time was only called the Informer, was named Ralph Lacy, of Risborough, and surnamed the cow-stealer.

These agreed between themselves where to make their first onset, which was to be, and was, on the meeting of the people called Quakers, then holden at the house of William Russel, called Jourdan's, in the parish of Giles-Chalfont in the county of Bucks. That which was lacking to their accommodation, was a place of harbour, fit for such beasts of prey to lurk in; for assistance wherein, recourse was had to parson Philips, none being so ready, none so willing, none so able to help them as he.

A friend he had in a corner, a widow woman, not long before one of his parishioners. Her name was Anne Dell, and at that time she lived at a farm called Whites, a by-place in the parish of Beaconsfield, where she removed from Hitchindon. To her these fellows were recommended by her old friend the parson. She with all readiness received them, her house was at all times open to them, and what she had was at their command.

She had two sons at home with her, both at man's estate; against the eldest of whom, her maid-servant not long before had laid a charge, to smother up the infamy of which proved expensive to them. The younger son, whose name was John Dell, hoping by the pillage of his honest neighbours, to regain what the profligacy of his brother had misspent, listed himself in the service of his mother's new guests, to attend on them as their guide, and to inform them, (who were too much strangers to pretend to know the names of any of the persons there) whom they should inform against.

Thus consorted, and in a triple league confederated, on the 24th day of the fifth month, commonly called July, in the year 1670, they appeared openly, and began to act their intended tragedy upon the Quakers' meeting at the place aforesaid, to which I belonged, and at which I was present. The chief actor, Poulter, behaved himself with such impetuous violence and brutish rudeness, as gave occasion

for inquiry, who or what he was? He was soon discovered to be the Trepan, so infamous and abhorred by all sober people, and afterwards daily detected of gross impieties, and even capital crimes; and the felonious taking of certain goods from one of Brainford, whom also he cheated of money. These things raising an outcry in the country upon him, made him consult his own safety, and leaving his part to be acted by others, he quitted the country as soon as he could.

He being gone, Satan soon supplied his place, by sending one Richard Aris, a broken ironmonger of Wiccomb, to join with Lacy in his service, prompted thereto, in hopes that he might thereby repair his broken fortunes.

Of this new adventurer this single character may serve, whereby the reader may make judgment of him, as of the lion by his paw; that at the sessions holden at Wiccomb in October then last past, he was openly accused of having enticed one Harding of the same town, to be his companion and associate in robbing on the highway, and proof offered to be made that he had made bullets in order to that service; which charge Harding himself, whom he had endeavoured to draw into that heinous wickedness, was ready in court to prove upon oath, had not the prosecution been discountenanced and smothered.

Lacy the cow-stealer, having thus got Aris, the intended highwayman to be his comrade, they came on the 21st of the month called August 1670, to the meeting of the people called Quakers, where Lacy with Poulter had been a month before; and taking for granted that the same who had been there before, were there then, they went to a justice of the peace called sir Thomas Clayton, and swore at all adventure, against one Thomas Zachary and his wife, whom Lacy understood to have been there the month before, that they were then present in that meeting. Whereas neither the said Thomas Zachary nor his wife were at that meeting, but were both of them at London, above twenty miles distant, all that day, having been there some time before and after.

Notwithstanding, upon this false oath of these false men, the justice laid fines upon the said Thomas Zachary of ten pounds for his own offence, ten pounds for his wife's, and ten pounds for the offence of a pretended preacher, though indeed there was not any that preached at that meeting that day; and issued forth his warrant to the officers of Beaconsfield, where Thomas Zachary dwelt, for the levying of the same upon his goods.

I mention these things thus particularly, though not an immediate suffering of my own, because, in the consequence thereof, it occasioned no small trouble and exercise to me.

For when Thomas Zachary, returning home from London, understanding what had been done against him, and advising what to do, was informed by a neighbouring attorney, that his remedy lay in appealing from the judgment of the convicting justice, to the general Quarter Sessions of the peace; he thereupon ordering the said attorney to draw up his appeal in form of law, went himself with it and tendered it to the justice. But the justice being a man neither well principled, nor well natured, and uneasy that he should lose the advantage, both of the present conviction and future service of such, in his judgment, useful men, as those two bold informers were likely to be, fell sharply upon Thomas

Zachary, charging him that he suffered justly, and that his suffering was not on a religious account.

This rough and unjust dealing engaged the good man to enter into further discourse with the justice, in defence of his own innocency. From which discourse the insidious justice, taking offence at some expression of his, charged him with saying, the righteous are oppressed and the wicked go unpunished; which the justice interpreting to be a reflection on the government, and calling it a high misdemeanour, required sureties of the good man to answer it at the next Quarter Sessions, and in the mean time to be bound to his good behaviour. But he, well knowing himself to be innocent of having broken any law, or done in this matter any evil, could not answer the justice's unjust demand, and therefore was sent forthwith a prisoner to the county jail.

By this severity it was thought the justice designed not only to wreak his displeasure on this good man, but to prevent the further prosecution of his appeal; whereby he should at once both oppress the righteous, by the levying the fines unduly imposed upon him, and secure the informers from a conviction of wilful perjury, and the punishment due therefor, that so they might go on without control in the wicked work they were engaged in.

But so great wickedness was not to be allowed to go unpunished, or at least undiscovered. Wherefore, although no way could be found at present, to get the good man released from his unjust imprisonment; yet that his restraint might not hinder the prosecution of his appeal, on which the detection of the informers' villainy depended, consideration being had thereof amongst some Friends, the management of the prosecution was committed to my care, who was thought, with respect at least to leisure and disengagement from other business, most fit to attend it; and very willingly I undertook it.

Wherefore at the next general Quarter Sessions of the peace, holden at High-Wiccomb in October following, I took care that four substantial witnesses, citizens of unquestionable credit, should come down from London, in a coach and four horses hired on purpose.

These gave so punctual and full evidence, that Thomas Zachary and his wife were in London all that day, whereon the informers had sworn them to have been at an unlawful meeting, at a place more than twenty miles distant from London, that notwithstanding what endeavours were used to the contrary, the jury found them not guilty. Whereupon the money deposited for the fines, at the entering of the appeal, ought to have been returned, and so was ten pounds of it; but the rest of the money being in the hand of the clerk of the peace, whose name was Wells, could never be got out again.

Thomas Zachary himself was brought from Aylesbury jail to Wiccomb, to receive his trial, and though no evil could be charged upon him, yet justice Clayton, who at first committed him, displeased to see the appeal prosecuted, and the conviction he had made set aside, by importunity prevailed with the bench to remand him to prison again, there to lie until another sessions.

While this was doing, I got an indictment drawn up against the informers, Aris and Lacy, for wilful perjury, and caused it to be delivered to the grand jury—who found the bill. And although the court

adjourned from the town-hall to the chamber at their inn, in favour as it was thought to the informers, on supposition we would not pursue them there, yet there they were pursued; and there being two counsels present from Windsor, the name of the one was Starky, and of the other, as I remember, Forster; the former of whom I had before retained upon the trial of the appeal, I now retained them both, and sent them into court again to prosecute the informers upon this indictment; which they did so smartly, that the informers being present, not suspecting any such sudden danger, were of necessity called to the bar and arraigned; and having pleaded not guilty, were forced to enter a traverse to avoid a present commitment. All the favour the court could show them, was to take them bail one for the other, though probably both not worth a groat, else they must have gone to jail for lack of bail, which would have put them beside their business, spoiled the informing trade, and broken the design; whereas now they were turned loose again, to do what mischief they could until the next sessions.

Accordingly they did what they could, and yet could make little or no earnings at it; for this little step of prosecution had made them so known, and their late apparent perjury had made them so detestable, that even the common sort of bad men shunned them, and would not willingly yield them any assistance.

The next Quarter Sessions was holden at Aylesbury, where we were made to bring down our witnesses again from London, in like manner and at like charge as before. And though I met with great discouragements in the prosecution, yet I followed it so vigorously, that I got a verdict against the informers for wilful perjury; and had forthwith taken them up, had not they fled from justice and hid themselves. However, I moved by my attorney for an order of court, directed to all mayors, bailiffs, high constables, petty constables, and other inferior officers of the peace, to arrest and take them up, where ever they should be found within the county of Bucks, and bring them to the county jail.

The report of this so terrified them, that of all things dreading the misery of lying in a jail, out of which they could not hope for deliverance, otherwise than by at least the loss of their ears,—and hopeless now of carrying on their informing trade, they disjoined, and one of them, Aris, fled the country; so that whatever gallows caught him, he appeared no more in this country. Lacy lurked privily for a while in woods and by-places, till hunger and need forced him out; and then casting himself upon a hazardous adventure, which yet proved to him the best course he could have taken, he went directly to the jail, where he knew the innocent man suffered imprisonment by his means, and for his sake; and asking for, and being brought to Thomas Zachary, he cast himself on his knees, at his feet, and with appearance of sorrow confessing his fault, so earnestly begged for forgiveness, that he wrought upon the tender nature of that good man, not only to put him in hopes of mercy, but to be his advocate by letter to me, to mitigate at least, if not wholly to remit the prosecution. To which I so far consented, as to let him know, I would suspend the execution of the warrant upon him, according as he behaved himself, or until he gave fresh provocation. At which message the fellow was so overjoyed, that relying with confidence thereon, he returned openly to his family and labour, and applied himself to business, as his neighbours observed and reported, with greater diligence and industry than he had ever done before.

Thus began and thus ended the informing trade, in these parts of the county of Bucks; the ill success that these informers found, discouraging all others, how vile soever, from attempting the like enterprise there ever after. And though it cost some money to carry on the prosecution, and some pains too; yet, for every shilling so spent, a pound probably was saved, of what in all likelihood would have been lost, by the spoil and havock that might have been made by distresses taken on their informations.

But so angry was the convicting justice, whatever others of the same rank were, at this prosecution, and the loss thereby of the service of those “honest men,” the perjured informers; for as I heard an attorney (one Hitchcock of Aylesbury, who was their advocate in court) say, a great lord, a peer of the realm, called them so in a letter directed to him, whereby he recommended to him the care and defence of them and their cause; that he prevailed to have the oath of allegiance tendered in court to Thomas Zachary, which he knew he would not take, because he could not take any oath at all; by which snare he was kept in prison a long time after, and so far as I remember, until a general pardon released him.

But though it pleased divine Providence, who sometimes vouchsafes to bring good out of evil, to put a stop, in a great measure at least, to the prosecution here begun; yet in other parts, both of the city and country, it was carried on with great severity and rigour; the worst men, for the most part, being set up for informers—the worst magistrates encouraging and abetting them; and the worst of the priests, who first began to blow the fire, now seeing how it took, spread and blazed, clapping their hands, and hallooing them on to this evil work.

The sense whereof, as it deeply affected my heart with a sympathizing pity for the oppressed sufferers, so it raised in my spirit a holy disdain and contempt of that spirit and its agent, by which this ungodly work was stirred up and carried on.

1672.—Scarcely was the before-mentioned storm of outward persecution from the government blown over, when Satan raised against us a storm of another kind. The former lasted long, and in many parts of the nation, particularly at London, it fell very sharply and violently, especially on the Quakers. For they having no refuge but God alone to fly to, could not dodge and shift to avoid the suffering, as others of other denominations, in their worldly wisdom and policy did—altering their meetings, with respect both to place and time, and forbearing to meet when forbidden, or kept out of their meeting-houses. So that of the several sorts of dissenters, the Quakers only held up a public testimony, as a standard or ensign of religion, by keeping their meetings duly and fully, at the accustomed times and places, so long as they were permitted to enjoy the use of their meeting-houses; and when they were shut up, and Friends kept out of them by force, they assembled in the streets, as near to their meeting-houses as they could.

This bold and truly Christian behaviour in the Quakers, disturbed and not a little displeased the persecutors, who fretted and complained, that the stubborn Quakers broke their strength, and bore off the blow from those other dissenters whom they most feared, and principally aimed at. For indeed they rather despised than feared the Quakers, as being a people, from whose peaceable principles and practices, they held themselves secure from danger; whereas having suffered severely, and that lately too,

by and under the other dissenters, they thought they had just cause to be apprehensive of danger from them, and good reason to suppress them.

On the other hand, the more ingenuous amongst other dissenters of each denomination, sensible of the ease they enjoyed by our bold and steady suffering, which abated the heat of the persecutors, and blunted the edge of the sword before it came to them, frankly acknowledged the benefit received; calling us the bulwark that kept off the force of the stroke from them; and praying that we might be preserved and enabled to break the strength of the enemy; nor could some of them forbear, those especially who were called Baptists, to express their kind and favourable opinion of us, and of the principles we professed, which emboldened us to go through that, which but to hear of was a terror to them.

This raised ill-will against us in some of their teachers, who though willing to reap the advantage of a shelter, by a retreat behind us during the storm; yet partly through an evil emulation, partly through fear lest they should lose some of those members of their society, who had discovered such favourable thoughts of our principles and us, they set themselves, as soon as the storm was over, to represent us in as ugly a dress, and in as frightful a figure to the world, as they could invent and put upon us.

1673.—In order whereto, one Thomas Hicks, a preacher among the Baptists, at London, took upon him to write several pamphlets successively, under the title of a Dialogue between a Christian and a Quaker; which were so craftily contrived, that the unwary reader might conclude them to be not merely fictions, but real discourses, actually held between one of the people called Quakers, and some other person. In these feigned dialogues, Hicks, having no regard to justice or common honesty, had made his counterfeit Quaker say whatever he thought would render him, one while sufficiently erroneous; another while ridiculous; forging in the Quaker's name, some things so abominably false—others so intolerably foolish, as could not reasonably be supposed to have come into the conceit, much less to have dropped from the lip or pen of any who went under the name of a Quaker.

These dialogues were answered by our friend William Penn, in two books; the first being entitled, Reason against Railing; the other, the Counterfeit Christian detected; in which Hicks being charged with manifest, as well as manifold forgeries, perversions, downright lies and slanders, against the people called Quakers in general, and William Penn, George Whitehead and several others by name; complaint was made, by way of an appeal, to the Baptists in and about London, for justice against Thomas Hicks.

1674.—Those Baptists, who it seems were in the plot with Hicks, to defame at any rate, right or wrong, the people called Quakers, taking the advantage of the absence of William Penn and George Whitehead, who were the persons most immediately concerned, and who were then gone a long journey in the service of truth, to be absent from the city, in all probability, for a considerable time, appointed a public meeting in one of their meeting-houses, under pretence of calling Thomas Hicks to account and hearing the charge made good against him; but with design to give the greater stroke to the Quakers, when they who should make good the charge against Hicks, could not be present. Upon their sending notice to the lodgings of William Penn and George Whitehead, of their intended meeting, they were

told by several Friends, that both of them were from home, travelling in the countries, but uncertain where; and therefore could not be informed of their intended meeting, either by letter or express, within the time by them limited. For this reason they were desired to defer the meeting till they could have notice of it, and time to return, that they might be at it. But these Baptists, whose design was otherwise laid, would not be prevailed with to defer their meeting; but glad of the advantage, gave their brother Hicks opportunity to make a colourable defence, where he had his party to help him, and none to oppose him; and having made a mock show of examining him and his works of darkness, and having heard one side only, they acquitted him.

This gave just occasion for a new complaint and demand of justice, against him and them. For as soon as William Penn returned to London, he in print exhibited his complaint of this unfair dealing, and demanded justice, by a rehearing of the matter in a public meeting, to be appointed by joint agreement. This went down hardly with the Baptists, nor could it be obtained from them, without great importunity and hard pressing. At length, after many delays and tricks used to shift it off, constrained by necessity, they yielded to have a meeting at their own meeting-house in Barbican, London.

There, amongst other Friends, was I, and undertook to read our charge against Thomas Hicks, which, not without much difficulty, I did; they, inasmuch as the house was theirs, putting all the inconveniences they could upon us.

The particular occurrences and arrangement of this meeting, I forbear here to mention, there being a narrative in print, to which I refer the reader; as also for an account of another which followed soon after, and was held in our own meeting-house by Wheelerstreet, near Spitalfields, London; the Baptists having refused to us any other public meeting, but we gave them timely notice of this.

To this meeting Thomas Hicks would not come, but lodged himself at an ale-house hard by: yet sent his brother Ives, with some others of the party, by clamorous noises to divert us from the prosecution of our charge against him; which they so effectually performed, that they would not permit the charge to be heard, though often attempted to be read.

This rude behaviour was a cause of grief to me; and afterwards when I understood that they used evasive tricks to avoid another meeting with us, and refused to do us right, my spirit was greatly stirred at their injustice, and in the sense thereof, willing if possible, to provoke them to more fair and manly dealing, I let fly a broad-side at them, in a single sheet of paper, under the title of a Fresh Pursuit. In which, having restated the controversy between them and us, and reinforced our charge of forgery, etc. against Thomas Hicks and his abettors, I offered a fair challenge to them, not only to Thomas Hicks himself, but to all his compurgators, who had before undertaken to acquit him from our charge, together with their companion Jeremy Ives, to give me a fair and public meeting, in which I would make good our charge against him as principal, and all the rest of them as accessaries. But nothing could provoke them to come fairly forth.

Yet not long after, finding themselves galled by the narrative lately published, of what had passed in the

last meeting near Wheeler street, they to help themselves, if they could, sent forth a counter account of that meeting, and of the former at Barbican, as much to the advantage of their own cause, as they upon deliberate consideration could contrive it. This was published by Thomas Plant, a Baptist teacher, and one of Thomas Hicks' former compurgators, and bore (but falsely) the title of a Contest for Christianity; or a faithful relation of two late meetings, etc.

To this I quickly wrote and published an answer. And because I saw the design and whole drift of the Baptists, was to shroud Thomas Hicks from our charge of forgery, under the specious pretence of his and their standing up and contending for Christianity, I gave my book this general title: Forgery no Christianity; or a brief Examen of a late book, etc. And having from their own book, plainly convicted that which they called a faithful relation, to be indeed a false relation—in an expostulatory postscript, I reinforced our charge and my former challenge; offering to make it good against them before a public and free auditory. But they were too wary to appear further, either in person or in print.

This was the end of that controversy, which was observed to have this issue; that what those dialogues were written to prevent, was by them and the unfair, unmanly, unchristian carriage of the Baptists, in endeavouring to defend them, hastened and brought to pass. For not a few of their members, upon this occasion left their meetings and society, and came over to the Quakers' meetings, and were joined in fellowship with them. Thanks be to God.

Though many of the most eminent among the Baptists, in and about London, engaged themselves in this quarrel, to have defended, or at least, to have brought fairly off, if it had been possible, their brother Hicks, yet the main service lay upon Jeremy Ives. Who having been an unsuccessful trader in cheese, and therein failed more than once, had now for some time given over that employment, and undertook to be the champion for the Baptists, and to maintain their quarrels against all comers.

His name was up for a topping disputant; but on the best observation I could make of him, both now and formerly, I could not find him a fair disputant. He seemed, I confess, well read in the fallacies of logic, and was indeed rather more ready, than true and sound, in framing syllogisms. But his chief are lay in tickling the humour of rude, unlearned and injudicious hearers, thereby insinuating himself into their good opinion, and then bantering his opponent.

1675.—The controversy which had been stirred up by those argumentative Baptists, had not been long ended, before another was raised by an Episcopal priest in Lincolnshire, who fearing, as it seemed, to lose some of his hearers to the Quakers, wrote a book, which he miscalled, a Friendly Conference between a minister and a parishoner of his, inclining to Quakerism. In this he misstated and greatly perverted the Quakers' principles, that he might thereby beget an aversion to them; and that he might abuse us the more securely, he concealed himself, sending forth his book without a name.

1676.—This book coming to my hand, it became my concern, (after I had read it, and considered the evil management, and worse design thereof) to answer it; which I did in a treatise called Truth prevailing, and detecting Error; published in the year 1676.

My answer I divided, according to the several subjects handled in the conference, into several distinct chapters, the last of which treated of tithes.

This being the priests' Delilah; and that chapter of mine pinching them it seems in a tender part, they laid their heads together, and with what speed they could, sent forth a distinct reply to that chapter, under the title of the Right of Tithes asserted and proved. This also came forth without a name, yet pretended to be written by another hand.

Before I had finished my rejoinder to this, came forth another, called a Vindication of the Friendly Conference; said to be written by the author of the feigned conference, who was not yet willing to trust the world with his name. So much of it as related to the subject I was then upon, I took into my rejoinder to the right of tithes, which I published in the year 1678, with this title, the Foundation of Tithes shaken, etc.

1680.—After this, it was a while before I heard from either of them again. But at length came forth a reply to my last, supposed to be written by the same hand, who had before written the Right of Tithes asserted, etc. but still without a name. This latter book had more of art than argument in it. It was indeed an ill-cooked hash, set off with as much flourish as the author was master of, and swelled by many quotations; but those so wretchedly misgiven, misapplied or perverted, that to a judicious and impartial reader, I dared oppose my Foundation of Tithes shaken, to the utmost force that book has in it. Yet it coming forth at a time when I was pretty well at leisure, I intended a full refutation of it; and in order thereto, had written between forty and fifty sheets; when other business more urgent intervening, took me off and detained me so long, that it was then judged out of season, and so it was laid aside.

Hitherto the war I had been engaged in, was in a sort foreign, with people of other religious persuasions, such as were open and avowed enemies; but now another sort arose, an intestine war, raised by some among ourselves— such as had once been of us, and yet retained the same profession, and would have been thought to be of us still; but having through ill-grounded jealousies, let in discontent, and thereupon fallen into jangling, chiefly about church discipline, they at length broke forth into an open schism, headed by two northern men of name and note, John Wilkinson and John Story. The latter of whom, as being the most active and popular man, having gained a considerable interest in the west, carried the controversy with him there, and there spreading it, drew many to abet him therein.

Among these, William Rogers, a merchant of Bristol, was not the least, nor least accounted of, by himself and some others. He was a bold and active man, moderately learned, but immoderately conceited of his own parts and abilities, which made him forward to engage, as thinking none would dare to take up the gauntlet he should cast down. This high opinion of himself, made him rather a troublesome than formidable enemy.

I shall pass over the various steps by which he advanced to open hostility, in which I was not actually, or personally engaged. In a while he arrived to that height of folly and wickedness, that he wrote and published a large book in five parts, to which he maliciously gave for a title, the Christian Quaker

distinguished from the Apostate and Innovator, thereby arrogating to himself and those who were of his party, the stile of Christian Quaker; and no less impiously than uncharitably branding and rejecting all others, even the main body of Friends, for apostates and innovators.

1681.—When this book came abroad, it was not a little (and he, for its sake) cried up by his injudicious admirers, whose applause setting his head afloat, he came up to London at the time of the yearly meeting following, and at the close thereof, gave notice in writing to this effect: that if any were dissatisfied with his book, he was there ready to maintain and defend both it and himself against all comers.

This daring challenge was neither dreaded nor slighted; but an answer forthwith returned in writing, signed by a few Friends, amongst whom I was one, to let him know, that as many were dissatisfied with his book and him, he should not fail, God willing, to be met by the sixth hour next morning, at the meeting place at Devonshire house.

Accordingly we met, and continued the meeting till noon or after; in which time he, surrounded with those of his own party, who might abet and assist him, was so fairly foiled and baffled, and so fully exposed, that he was glad to quit the place, and early next morning the town also; leaving, in excuse for his going so abruptly off, and thereby refusing us another meeting with him, which we had earnestly provoked him to, this slight shift, that he had before given earnest for his passage in the stage-coach home, and was not willing to lose it.

1682.—I had before this gotten a sight of his book, and procured one for my use on this occasion, but I had not time to read it through. But a while after, providence cast another of them into my hands very unexpectedly; for our dear Friend George Fox, passing through this county among Friends, and lying in his journey at my house, had one of them in his bags, which he had made some marginal notes upon. For that good man, like Julius Caesar, willing to improve all parts of his time, did usually, even in his travels, dictate to his amanuensis what he would have committed to writing. I knew not that he had this book with him, for he had not said any thing to me of it, till going in the morning into his chamber, while he was dressing himself, I found it lying on the table by him. And understanding that he was going but for a few weeks, to visit Friends in the meetings hereabouts, and the neighbouring parts of Oxford and Berkshire, and so return through this county again, I made bold to ask him if he would favour me so much, as to leave it with me till his return, that I might have the opportunity of reading it through. He consented, and as soon almost as he was gone, I set myself to read it over. But I had not gone far in it, before, observing the many foul falsehoods, malicious slanders, gross perversions and false doctrines abounding in it, the sense thereof inflamed my breast with a just and holy indignation against the work, and that devilish spirit in which it was brought forth. Wherefore, finding my spirit raised, and my understanding divinely opened to refute it, I began the book again, and reading it with pen in hand, answered it paragraphically as I went. And so clear were the openings I received from the Lord therein, that by the time my friend came back, I had gone through the greatest part of it, and was too far engaged in spirit, to think of giving over the work: wherefore, requesting him to continue the book a little longer with me, I soon after finished the answer, which, with Friends' approbation was

printed, under the title of “An Antidote against the infection of William Rogers' book, miscalled The Christian Quaker,” etc. This was written in the year 1682. But no answer was given to it, as far as I have ever heard, either by him or any other of his party; though many others were concerned therein, and some by name. Perhaps there might be a hand of Providence overruling them therein, to give me leisure to attend some other services, which soon after fell upon me.

It being a stormy time, and persecution waxing hot upon the conventicle act, through the busy boldness of hungry informers, who for their own advantage, did not only themselves hunt after religious and peaceable meetings, but drove on the officers, both the inferior and subordinate, and in some places, even the justices also, for fear of penalties, to hunt with them and for them. I found a pressure upon my spirit to write a small treatise, to inform such officers how they might secure and defend themselves from being ridden by those impudent informers, and made their drudges.

This treatise I called, A caution to constables, and other inferior officers, concerned in the execution of the conventicle act. With some observations thereupon, humbly offered by way of advice to such well-meaning and moderate justices of the peace, as would not willingly ruin their peaceable neighbours, etc.

This was thought to have some good service where it came, upon such sober and moderate officers, as well justices as constables, etc., as acted rather by constraint than choice; by encouraging them to stand their ground, with more courage and resolution, against the insults of saucy informers.

1683.—But whatever ease it brought to others, it brought me some trouble, and had like to have brought me into more danger, had not Providence wrought my deliverance by an unexpected way. For as soon as it came forth in print, which was in the year 1683, one William Ayrs of Watford in Hertfordshire, a friend and acquaintance of mine, who was both an apothecary and barber, being acquainted with several of the gentry in those parts, and going often to some of their houses to trim them, took one of these books with him, when he went to trim sir Benjamin Titchborn of Rickmansworth, and presented it to him, supposing he would have taken it kindly, as in like cases he had formerly done. But it fell out otherwise. For he looking it over after Ayrs was gone, and taking it by the wrong handle, entertained an evil opinion of it, and of me for it, though he knew me not.

He thereupon communicated both the book and his thoughts upon it, to a neighbouring justice living in Rickmansworth, whose name was Thomas Fotherly; who concurring with him in judgment, they concluded that I should be taken up and prosecuted for it, as a seditious book. For a libel they could not call it, my name being to it at length.

Wherefore sending for Ayrs who had brought the book, justice Titchborn examined him if he knew me, and where I dwelt. Who telling him, he knew me well, and had been often at my house; he gave him in charge to give me notice, that I should appear before him and the other justice, at Rickmansworth on such a day; threatening that if I did not appear, he himself should be prosecuted for spreading the book.

This put William Ayrs in a fright. Over he came in haste with this message to me, troubled that he should be a means to bring me into trouble. But I endeavoured to give him ease, by assuring him I would not fail with God's leave to appear at the time and place appointed, and thereby free him from trouble or danger.

In the interim I received advice, by an express out of Sussex, that Guli Penn, with whom I had had an intimate acquaintance and firm friendship from our very youths, was very dangerously ill, her husband being absent in Pennsylvania, and that she had a great desire to see and speak with me.

This put me to a great strait, and brought a sore exercise on my mind. I was divided between honour and friendship. I had engaged my word to appear before the justices; which to omit, would bring dishonour on me and my profession. To stay till that time was come and past, might probably prove, if I should then be left at liberty, too late to answer her desire and satisfy friendship.

After some little deliberation, I resolved, as the best expedient to answer both ends, to go over next morning to the justices, and lay my strait before them, and try if I could procure from them a respite of my appearance before them, until I had been in Sussex, and paid the duty of friendship to my sick friend. This I had the more hopes to obtain, because I knew those justices had a great respect for Guli. For when William Penn and she were first married, they lived for some years in Rickmansworth, in which time they contracted a neighbourly friendship with both these justices and theirs, who ever after retained a kind regard for both.

Early therefore in the morning I rode over. But being wholly a stranger to the justices, I went first to Watford, that I might take Ayrs along with me, who supposed himself to have some interest in justice Titchborn; and when I came there, understanding that another Friend of that Town, whose name was John Wells, was well acquainted with the other justice, Fotherly; having imparted to them the occasion of my coming, I took them both with me and hasted back to Rickmansworth. Having put our horses up at an inn, and leaving William Ayrs (who was a stranger to Fotherly) there, I went with John Wells to Fotherly's house; and being brought into a fair hall, I tarried there while Wells went into the parlour to him, and having acquainted him that I was there, and desired to speak to him, brought him to me with severity in his countenance.

After he had asked me, in a tone which spake displeasure, what I had to say to him? I told him, I came to wait on him upon an intimation given me, that he had something to say to me: he thereupon plucking my book out of his pocket, asked me if I owned myself to be the author of that book? I told him, if he pleased to let me look into it, if it were mine, I would not deny it. He thereupon giving it into my hand, when I had turned over the leaves, and looked it through, finding it to be as it came from the press, I told him, I wrote the book, and would own it, all but the errors of the press. Whereupon he, looking sternly on me, answered, 'Your own errors you should have said.'

Having innocency on my side, I was not at all daunted at either his speech or looks; but feeling the Lord present with me, I replied, I know there are errors of the press in it, and therefore I excepted them;

but I do not know there is any error of mine in it, and therefore cannot make that exception. But, added I, if you please to show me any error of mine in it, I shall readily both acknowledge and retract it. And thereupon I desired him to give me an instance, in any one passage in that book, wherein he thought I had erred. He said he needed not go to particulars; but charge me with the general contents of the whole book. I replied, that such a charge would be too general for me to give a particular answer to; but if he would assign me any particular passage or sentence in the book, wherein he apprehended the ground of offence to lie—when I should have opened the terms, and explained my meaning therein, he might perhaps find cause to change his mind, and entertain a better opinion both of the book and me. And therefore I again entreated him, to let me know what particular passage or passages had given him an offence. He told me I needed not to be in so much haste for that—I might have it timely enough, if not too soon; 'but this,' said he, 'is not the day appointed for your hearing, and therefore,' added he, 'what, I pray, made you in such haste to come now?' I told him, I hoped he would not take it for an argument of guilt, that I came before I was sent for, and offered myself to my purgation before the time appointed. And this I spake with somewhat a brisker air, which had so much influence on him, as to bring a somewhat softer air over his countenance.

Then going on, I told him I had a particular occasion which induced me to come now, which was, that I received advice last night, by an express out of Sussex, that William Penn's wife, with whom I had had an intimate acquaintance and strict friendship, lay now there very ill, not without great danger, in the apprehension of those about her, of her life; and that she had expressed her desire that I would come to her, as soon as I could; the rather, for that her husband was absent in America. That this had brought a great strait upon me, being divided between friendship and duty—willing to visit my friend in her illness, which the nature and law of friendship required; yet unwilling to omit my duty, by failing of my appearance before him and the other justice, according to their command and my promise, lest I should thereby subject, not my own reputation only, but the reputation of my religious profession, to the suspicion of guilt, and the censure of willingly shunning a trial. To prevent which I had chosen to anticipate the time and come now, to see if I could give them satisfaction, in what they had to object against me, and thereupon being dismissed, pursue my journey into Sussex; or if by them detained, to submit to providence, and by an express to acquaint my friend therewith, both to free her from an expectation of my coming, and myself from any imputation of neglect.

While I thus delivered myself, I observed a sensible alteration in the justice; and when I had done speaking, he first said, he was very sorry for madam Penn's illness; of whose virtue and worth he spake very highly, yet not more than was her due. Then he told me, that for her sake, he would do what he could to further my visit to her;

'But,' said he, 'I am but one, and of myself can do nothing in it; therefore you must go to sir Benjamin Titchborn, and if he be at home, see if you can prevail with him to meet me, that we may consider of it.' 'But I can assure you,' added he, 'the matter which will be laid to your charge concerning your book, is of greater importance than you seem to think it. For your book has been laid before the king and council; and the earl of Bridgewater, who is one of the council, has hereupon given us command to

examine you about it, and secure you.'

I wish, said I, I could speak with the earl myself; for I make no doubt but to acquit myself to him: and, added I, if you please to give me your letter to him, I will wait upon him with it forthwith. For although I know, continued I, that he has no favour for any of my persuasion, yet knowing myself to be wholly innocent in this matter, I can with confidence appear before him, or even before the king in council.

'Well,' said he, 'I see you are confident; but for all that, let me tell you, how good soever your intention was, you timed the publishing of your book very unluckily; for you cannot be ignorant that there is a very dangerous plot lately discovered, contrived by the dissenters, against the government and his majesty's life.' This was the Rye-plot, then newly broke forth, and laid upon the Presbyterians: 'and for you,' added he, 'to publish a book, just at that juncture of time, to discourage the magistrates and other officers, from putting in execution those laws which were made to suppress their meetings, looks, I must tell you, with but a scurvy countenance upon you.'

If, replied I, with somewhat a pleasanter air, there was any mis-timing in the case, it must lie on the part of those plotters, for timing the breaking forth of their plot while my book was printing; for I can bring very good proof, that my book was in the press, and well-nigh wrought off, before any man talked or knew of a plot, but those who were in it. Here our discourse ended, and I taking my leave of him for the present, went to my horse, and changing my companion, rode to justice Titchborn's, having with me William Ayrs, who was best acquainted with him, and who had casually brought this trouble on me.

When he had introduced me to Titchborn, I gave him a like account of the occasion of my coming at that time, as I had before given to the other justice. And both he and his lady who was present, expressed much concern for Guli Penn's illness.

I found this man to be of quite another temper than justice Fotherly; for this man was smooth, soft and oily, whereas the other was rather rough, severe and sharp. Yet at the winding up, I found Fotherly my truest friend.

When I had told sir Benjamin Titchborn, that I came from justice Fotherly, and requested him to give him a meeting to consider of my business; he readily, without any hesitation, told me he would go with me to Rickmansworth, from which his house was distant about a mile, and calling for his horses, mounted immediately, and to Rickmansworth we rode.

After they had been a little while together, I was called in before them; and in the first place they examined me, what was my intention and design in writing that book? I told them the introductory part of it gave a plain account of it, namely: "That it was to get ease from the penalties of a severe law, often executed with too great a severity by unskilful officers, who were driven on beyond the bounds of their duty, by the impetuous threats of a sort of insolent fellows, as needy as greedy, who for their own advantage, sought our ruin." To prevent which, was the design and drift of that book, by acquainting such officers how they might safely demean themselves, in the execution of their offices, towards their

honest and peaceable neighbours, without ruining either their neighbours or themselves, to enrich some of the worst of men. And that I humbly conceived, it was neither unlawful nor unreasonable for a sufferer to do this, so long as it was done in a fair, sober and peaceable way.

They then put me in mind of the plot; told me it was a troublesome and dangerous time, and my book might be construed to import sedition, in discouraging the officers from putting the laws in execution, as by law and by their oath they were bound. And in fine brought it to this issue, that they were directed to secure me, by a commitment to prison until the assize, at which I should receive a further charge than they were provided now to give me; but because they were desirous to forward my visit to madam Penn, they told me they would admit me to bail, and therefore if I would enter a recognizance, with sufficient sureties, for my appearance at the next assize, they would leave me at liberty to go on my journey.

I told them, I could not do it. They said they would give me as little trouble as they could, and therefore they would not put me to seek bail; but would accept those two friends of mine, who were then present, to be bound with me for my appearance.

I let them know, my strait lay not in the difficulty of procuring sureties, for I did suppose myself to have sufficient acquaintance and credit in that place, if on such an occasion I could be free to use it; but as I knew myself to be an innocent man, I had not satisfaction in myself, to desire others to be bound for me, or to enter myself into a recognizance; that carrying in it, to my apprehension, a reflection on my innocency, and the reputation of my Christian profession.

Here we stuck and struggled about this a while, till at length finding me fixed in my judgment, and resolved rather to go to prison than give bail, they asked me if I was against appearing or only against being bound with sureties to appear. I told them I was not against appearing; which as I could not avoid, if I would, so I would not if I might; but was ready and willing to appear if required, to answer whatsoever should be charged against me. But in any case of a religious nature, or wherein my Christian profession was concerned, which I took this case to be, I could not yield to give any other or further security than my word, or promise, as a Christian.

They, unwilling to commit me, took hold of that, and asked if I would promise to appear. I answered. Yes; with due limitations. 'What do you mean by due limitations,' said they. I mean, replied I, if I am not disabled, or prevented by sickness or imprisonment. For, added I, as you alledge that it is a troublesome time, I perhaps may find it so. I may for ought I know, be seized and imprisoned elsewhere, on the same account for which I now stand here before you, and if I should, how then could I appear at the assize in this county? 'Oh,' said they, 'these are due limitations indeed! Sickness or imprisonment are lawful excuses, and if either of these befall you, we shall not expect your appearance here; but then you must certify us, that you are so disabled by sickness or restraint.' But, said I, how shall I know when and where I shall wait upon you again after my return from Sussex? 'You need not,' said they, 'trouble yourself about that; we will take care to give you notice of both time and place, and till you hear from us, you may dispose yourself as you please.'

Well then, said I, I do promise you, that when I shall have received from you a fresh command to appear before you, I will, if the Lord permit me life, health and liberty, appear when and where you shall appoint.

'It is enough,' said they, 'we will take your word:' and desiring me to give their hearty respects and service to madam Penn, they dismissed me with their wishes for a good journey.

I was sensible, that in this they had dealt very favourably and kindly with me, therefore I could not but acknowledge to them the sense I had of it. Which done I took leave of them, and mounting, returned home with what haste I could, to let my wife know how I had sped. And having given her a summary account of the business, I took horse again, and went so far that evening towards Worminghurst, that I got there pretty early next morning, and to my great satisfaction, found my friend in a hopeful way towards a recovery.

I staid some days with her; and then finding her illness wear daily off, and some other Friends being come from London to visit her, I was mindful of my engagement to the justices, and unwilling, by too long an absence, to give them occasion to suspect I was willing to avoid their summons, so leaving those other Friends to bear her company longer, I took my leave of her and them, and set my face homewards carrying with me the welcome account of my friend's recovery.

Being returned home, I waited in daily expectation of a command from the justices to appear again before them; but none came. I spake with those Friends who had been with me when I was before them, and they said they had heard nothing of it from them, although they had since been in company with them. At length the assize came; but no notice was given to me, that I should appear there; in fine, they never troubled themselves or me any further about it.

Thus was a cloud that looked black and threatened a great storm, blown gently over by a providential breath, which I could not but acknowledge with a thankful mind, to the all-great, all-good, all-wise disposer, in whose hand, and at whose command, the hearts of all men, even the greatest are, and who turns their counsels, disappoints their purposes, and defeats their designs and contrivances, as he pleases. For if my dear friend Guli Penn had not fallen sick, if I had not thereupon been sent for to her, I had not prevented the time of my appearance, but had appeared on the day appointed. And, as I afterwards understood, that was the day appointed for the appearance of a great many persons, of the dissenting party in that side of the county, who were to be taken up and secured, on the account of the aforementioned plot, which had been cast upon the Presbyterians. So that if I had then appeared, with and amongst them, I had in all likelihood, been sent to jail with them for company, and that under the imputation of a plotter; than which, nothing was more contrary to my profession and inclination.

But though I came off so easy, it fared not so well with others; for the storm increasing, many Friends in several parts, both of city and country, suffered greatly; the sense whereof did deeply affect me, and the more, for that I observed the magistrates, not thinking the laws which had been made against us severe enough, perverted the law in order to punish us. For calling our peaceable meetings riots, which

in the legal notion of the word riot, is a contradiction in terms, indicted our friends as rioters for only sitting in a meeting, though nothing was there either said or done by them, and then set fines on them at pleasure.

This I knew to be not only against right and justice, but even against law; and it troubled me to think that we should be made to suffer not only by laws made directly against us, but even by laws that did not at all concern us. Nor was it long before I had occasion offered more thoroughly to consider this matter.

For a justice of the peace in this county, who was called sir Dennis Hampson of Taplow, breaking in with a party of horse upon a little meeting near Woodburn, in his neighbourhood, the 1st of the fifth month 1683, sent most of the men, to the number of twenty-three, whom he found there, to Aylesbury prison, though most of them were poor men who lived by their labour; and not going himself to the next Quarter Sessions at Buckingham, on the 12th of the same month, sent his clerk with directions that they should be indicted for a riot. There the prisoners were carried and indicted accordingly; and being pressed by the court to traverse and give bail, they moved to be tried forthwith, but that was denied them. And they giving in writing the reason of their refusing bail and fees, were remanded to prison till next Quarter Sessions; but William Woodhouse was again bailed, as he had been before, and William Mason and John Reeve, who not being Friends, but casually taken at that meeting, entered recognizance as the court desired, and so were released till next sessions. Before which time Mason died, and Reeve being sick, appeared not, but got himself taken off. In the eighth month following, the twenty-one prisoners that remained were brought to trial, a jury was found, who brought in a pretended verdict, that they were guilty of a riot, for only sitting peaceably together without word or action; though there was no proclamation made, nor they required to depart. But one of the jurymen afterwards did confess, he knew not what a riot was; yet the prisoners were fined a noble apiece, and re-committed to prison during life (a hard sentence) or the king's pleasure, or until they should pay the said fines. William Woodhouse was forthwith discharged, by his kinsman paying the fine and fees for him. Thomas Dell and Edward Moore also, by other people of the world paying their fines and fees for them; and shortly after Stephen Pewsey, by the town and parish where he lived, for fear his wife and children should become a charge upon them. The other seventeen remained prisoners till king James' proclamation of pardon.

APPENDIX

Containing a Supplementary Memoir of the Life of Thomas Ellwood.

It does not appear that Thomas Ellwood left any account of his own life, subsequent to the close of 1683, the period at which the preceding memoir concludes; though from there to the time of his decease, an interval elapsed of about thirty years. During that time his active pen was employed, with

but little intermission, in support of the cause, to the service of which his heart and talents were devoted. To this circumstance may reasonably be attributed the deficiency in his narrative; which the following pages, comprising a brief notice of the principal circumstances that have been handed down to us, relating to that portion of his life, may in some measure supply.

In the early part of the succeeding year, 1686, Thomas Ellwood published a general Epistle to Friends, in which he endeavoured, with affectionate earnestness, to check the tendency to division and declension which had manifested in some measure in the Society; exhorting his fellow members to maintain a true consistency of conduct, and to guard against the injurious effects of a worldly spirit, as follows:

Dear friends, unto whom the gathering arm of the Lord has reached, and who have known, in your several measures, a being gathered thereby into the heavenly life, and are witnesses of the preserving power, by which you have been kept faithful to the Lord, and regardful of his honour: unto you, in an especial manner, is the salutation of my true and tender love in the Lord; and for you, as for myself, are the breathings and fervent desires of my soul offered up, in the one Spirit, unto him who is your God and mine, that both you and I may be for ever kept in the fresh sense of his tender mercies and great loving-kindness unto us, that therein our souls may cleave firmly unto him, and never depart from him. For, friends, it is a trying day, a day of great difficulty and danger, wherein the enemy is at work, and very busy, setting his snares on every side, and spreading his temptations on every hand; and some, alas! have entered thereinto, and are caught and held therein, for whom my soul in secret mourns.

And truly, friends, a great weight has been upon my spirit for many days, and my mind has been deeply exercised, in the sense I have of the enemy's prevailing by one bait or other, to unsettle the minds of some, unto whom the arm of the Lord had reached, and in some measure gathered to a resting place: but not abiding in that pure light, by which they were at first visited, and to which they were at first turned, the understanding has been veiled again; the eye, which was once in some measure opened, has the God of this world insensibly blinded again, and darkness is come over them, to that degree, that they can now contentedly take up again, what in the day of their conviction, and in the time of their true tenderness, they cast off as a burden too heavy to be borne. O my friends! this has been the enemy's work; therefore it greatly behoves all to watch against him: for it has been for lack of watchfulness, that he has got entrance into any. For, when the mind has been from off the true watch, in a secure and careless state, then has he secretly wrought, and presented his fair baits, his allurements or enticements by pleasure or profit, to catch the unwary mind. And hence it has come to pass, that some, who have come out fairly, and begun well, and have seemed in good earnest to set their hands to God's plough, have looked back, and been weary of the yoke of Christ, and have either lusted after the flesh-pots of Egypt again, or turned aside into some by-path or crooked way in the wilderness, and thereby fallen short of the promised good land.

But you, my dear friends, in whom the word of life abides, and who abide in the virtue and

savour thereof, you know the wiles of the enemy, and the power which subdues him, and the Rock in which the preservation and safety is. So that I write not these things unto you, because you know them not; but the end of my thus writing is, to stir up the pure mind in all upon whom the name of the Lord is called, that we all may be provoked to watchfulness against the workings of the wicked one. Therefore, dear friends, bear, I beseech you, the word of exhortation, though from one that is little and low, and through mercy sensible of it, and who has not been accustomed to appear after this manner; but the wind, you know, blows where it wishes.

Friends, call to mind the former times, and remember the days that are past and gone, when the day of the Lord first dawned unto you, and his power seized upon you. You know how weighty and retired the spirits of Friends then were; how grave and solid their deportment and carriage; how few and savoury their words, tending to edify the hearers; how great a fear and backwardness was in them, to enter into familiarity with the world's people. O friends! that was a good day, and that was a safe state; for fear begets watchfulness, and watchfulness is a means to prevent danger. Therefore, all friends, keep in the holy fear, and therein watch against the enemy, that he entangle you not, nor hurt your spirits by a too near familiarity, and intimate conversing with the people of the world; for therein, I assure you, lies a snare.

For though it be both lawful and necessary, and in some cases also useful and serviceable to the Truth, to converse with them that are without; yet if any friend should adventure in a frank and free mind, beyond the limits of the pure fear, to entertain familiarity with the world's people, the spirit of the world in them will seek an entrance; and, if not diligently watched against, will also get an entrance, and bring a hurt and a loss upon him or them into whom it so gets. For being once entered, it will insensibly work, and dispose the mind to a condescension to and compliance with the people of the world it converses with, first in one thing, then in another; in words, in behaviour, etc., little things in appearance, but great in consequence, till at length an indifference gets up in the mind, and the testimony of truth by degrees is let fall. But while the pure fear is kept to and dwelt in, the watch is always set, the spirit is retired and weighty, and a holy awfulness rests upon the mind, which renders such converse both safe to the friends, and more serviceable to them they converse withal.

And, friends, not only in your conversing with the world's people, but in all your conduct and course of life, watch against the spirit of the world; for it lies near to tempt, and to draw out the mind, and to lead back into the world again. You know, friends, that at the first, when the visiting arm of the Lord reached to us, he led us out of the world's ways, manners, customs, and fashions; and a close testimony, both in word and practice, was borne against them. But how has this testimony been kept up, and kept to, by all who have since made profession of the Truth! Ah! how has the enemy, for lack of watchfulness, stolen in upon too many, and led out their minds from that which did at first convince them, into a liberty beyond the cross of Christ Jesus! and in that liberty they have run into the world's fashions, which the worldly spirit continually invents to feed the vain and airy minds withal, that they may not come to gravity

and solidity.

Thence it has come to pass, that there is scarcely a new fashion come up, or a fantastic cut invented, but some one or other, that professes Truth, is ready with the foremost to run into it. Ah, friends! the world sees this, and smiles, and points the finger at it. And this is both a hurt to the particular, and a reproach to the general. Therefore, O! let the lot be cast; let search be made by every one, and let every one examine himself, that this Achan, with his Babylonish garment, may be found and cast out; for indeed he is a troubler of Israel.

And all friends, who upon true search shall find yourselves concerned in this particular, I warn and exhort you all, return to that which at first convinced you; to that keep close, in that abide, that therein you may know, as at the first, not only a bridle to the tongue, but a curb to the roving mind, a restraint to the wandering desire. For assuredly, friends, if truth be kept to, none will need to learn of the world what to wear, what to put on, or how to shape and fashion their garments; but Truth will teach all how best to answer the end of clothing, both for useful service and modest decency. And the cross of Christ will be a yoke to the unruly will, and a restraint upon the careless mind; and will crucify that nature that delights in finery and in bravery of apparel, in which the true adorning does not stand, but in the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even a meek and quiet spirit.

And the grace of God, which has appeared to all, and which has brought salvation to many, will not only teach to deny all ungodliness and worldly lusts, and to live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world, but will also lead those that obey it, out of all excess, and out of all superfluities and worldly vanities, and will teach them to order their conduct aright. Therefore to this heavenly grace let every mind be turned, and therein stayed; that thereby all who profess the Truth may be kept in the holy limits of it; that in their whole conduct and course of life—in eating, in drinking, in putting on apparel, and in whatsoever else we do or take in hand, all may be done to the glory of God, that our moderation in all things may appear unto all men.

And let not any deceive and hurt themselves with a false plea, saying, 'I will be left to my liberty; I have freedom to do, go, or wear so and so; and religion stands not in clothes,' etc., for that liberty which the worldly spirits leads into, is not indeed the true liberty, but is a false and feigned liberty, which leads into true and real bondage. And though religion stands not simply in clothes; yet true religion stands in that which sets a bound and limit to the mind with respect to clothes, as well as to other things. So that where there is a running out into excess and vanity in apparel, that is a certain indication and token that the mind is got loose, and has cast off the yoke, and is broken away from its due subjection to that divine power, in which the true religion stands.

Great has been the hurt which the enemy has done in this day, by leading into a false freedom, and crying up a wrong liberty; for under this pretence have crept in great disorders, some running out one way, and some another; some mixing in marriages with the world's people, and

some going to the priest to be married. And many loose and unclean spirits have shrouded themselves under this plausible pretence of being left to their liberty, unto whom Truth's order is irksome and uneasy; and they kick against it, and call it imposition, because it checks their licentious liberty.

Therefore all, who join with their plea, examine and try what liberty it is you claim and stand for; for the true liberty is not inconsistent with the cross of Christ, nor repugnant to his yoke, but agrees with it, and is obtained through it, and maintained by it.

And none whom the Son has made free indeed, will or can plead, or make use of that liberty, in opposition to any means which the God of order has appointed, or set up in his church for keeping out confusion, disorder, and looseness. And hereby all may take a right measure, and may certainly know what kind of liberty that is, which some have so hotly contended for, in opposition to that necessary and commendable order which God has led his people into, and which the enemy, in his agents, labours so hard to lead them out of. For the enemy well knows, that the tendency and service thereof, is to detect and discover his secret workings, and to bring his deeds to light and judgment; and therefore he strives with might and main to overturn it, crying out through his instruments; 'Away with your order; let every one be left to his liberty.' By which seemingly fair and specious plea, not only the loose, disorderly, factious spirits have been let up, and encouraged to greater boldness and licentiousness; but some simple and well-meaning friends also, not seeing the design of Satan therein, have been misled thereby, and made use of by the enemy, and the more subtle of his instruments, to oppose the good order of Truth.

Thus has the enemy wrought, and sought to lay waste the work of the Lord. But the Lord, magnified be his holy name, has not been lacking to his people, who in sincerity of heart have diligently waited on Him, and trusted in him; for he has all along raised up some, whose eyes he has opened, to see the design and working of the evil one, and whose spirits he has engaged to stand up in a faithful testimony against him, contending for the way of Truth. Which when they, in whom the enemy wrought, perceived, and found they could not run over the heads of Friends, and carry things on as themselves pleased, they set themselves in a heady, wilful spirit, to raise disturbances in meetings for business, by encouraging and abetting such heady, loose, contentious, and disorderly persons as would join with them; thus hardening themselves, and provoking the Lord to give them up to blindness and hardness of heart, till at length the enemy prevailed so far upon them, as to work them, by degrees, from discontent to prejudice, then to enmity, and so at length, in several places, to an open defection, apostasy, and separation.

Now, although I know, my dear friends, that you who have kept your habitation in the light of the Lord, and whose eye is single therein, have a clear sight and understanding, that the spirit which has thus wrought and fought against the Truth, is not, nor can be of God, but is of the wicked one; and although the fruits it has brought forth, through the agents and instruments in

and by which it has wrought, in making disturbances in meetings, to the breaking the church's peace; causing divisions among Friends; publishing to the world most wicked, malicious, railing, and scandalous books against Friends; (an effect of the greatest enmity;) shutting and keeping Friends out of their common meeting-houses, in which they have a just right and property, and not permitting them to meet therein, which is a part of the persecution inflicted on Friends by the world, and at length also setting up separate meetings, in opposition to the meetings of God's people;—although, I say, these fruits are sufficient of themselves to discover and manifest, to an unclouded mind, what spirit that is and must needs be, which has brought them forth; yet inasmuch as some, partly through weakness of judgment, and partly through personal affection to some of those leading separatists, are yet in danger to be betrayed by their fair words and feigned speeches, wherewith they lie in wait to deceive; I feel a concern remain upon my spirit, in the love of God, to warn all such, that they join not with, nor give countenance unto that spirit, that has thus wrought against the Lord, and against his people.

For, friends, in the holy fear of the living God and in the openings of the spring of his pure life in my soul at this time, and from the certain knowledge and clear demonstration which I have received from him therein, I testify and declare unto you, that this spirit, which in this day has run out, and has drawn out some into opposition against the way and work of the Lord, into division and separation from the people of the Lord, and from the holy assemblies which the Lord has gathered, and by his powerful presence has owned, and daily does own;—this spirit, I say, is the same with that which formerly wrought, in other appearances, against the Truth in our time; and is the same with that spirit, which wrought against the work of the Lord in the days of the holy apostles. This mystery of iniquity then wrought, and caused many to turn aside, and to leave the right way of the Lord, and to forsake the assemblies of God's people; yes, and to run into separation too; upon whom the Holy Ghost has set his brand, that they were sensual, having not the Spirit. And many close and sharp testimonies did the Lord give forth through his servants in that day against this spirit, and against those that were joined to it, and acted by it, as may be seen in the Holy Scriptures. Yes, friends, this spirit that has led some now to set up their separate meetings, is the same that led Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, to set up his separate altar at Bethel, of which you may read, 1 Kings, 12th and 13th chapters.

He was afraid that if the people should continue to go up to the house of the Lord, to do sacrifice there, as they had been accustomed to do, and as the Lord had required, they would then forsake him, and return to the Lord again.

O friends! consider, how has dryness and withering come upon many a great and stout one in this day, who have lifted up themselves against the Lord, and have sought, by the devices of their own hearts, to establish themselves in their own way, against the way of the Lord, so that the hand they have put forth in that work, they could not pull in again.

O friends! stand in the fear and counsel of the Lord, and in the dominion of his power, over this

wicked spirit in all its twistings and twinings. Let neither the frowns nor the fawnings, the threats nor the flatteries, the hard speeches, nor the oily words, the Pharisaical friendship, the dissembling love, the seeming kindness, the familiar carriage, the free entertainment, the offer of advantage, etc., have any influence upon you, to draw you in the least measure to join or touch with God's enemy; with him that sets up a separate altar, a separate meeting in opposition to, and to draw or keep from, the right way of the Lord.

Mind well the answer which the man of God gave to Jeroboam's tempting invitation; 'If,' said he, 'you will give me half your house, I will not go in with you; neither will I eat bread nor drink water in this place.' This was where the separate altar was set up.

Therefore, all friends, watch against every temptation thereunto, as you love your lives, as you regard the good and eternal welfare of your souls; and let not the name or person of any man have power over you, to draw you aside, neither let numbers sway with you: in which, I know, these adversaries of truth do not a little boast, though blessed be God, with little reason; but remember that Jeroboam of old had ten tribes out of twelve to cry up his separate altar; notwithstanding which, he is branded to posterity in the holy record with this brand, 'Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, who made Israel to sin.' Therefore let not any follow a multitude to do evil. Exod. xxiii. 2. But all follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men. 1 Thess. v. 15. For friends, you know where the broad way leads, and what it is the wide gate opens into, which the many go in at; but keep you to the strait gate, and walk you on in the narrow way, for in it is safety, and at the end of it everlasting happiness.

But, friends, because of the straitness of this gate, and the narrowness of this way, some that have attempted to walk in it, are grown weary of it, and have sought out another way, which, Jeroboam-like, they have devised of their own hearts, wherein they may have more room, more scope, more company, ease in the flesh, liberty to the flesh, and all without control. And this, I am satisfied, has not been the least motive to the separation in this day, as it was the greatest in days past; though some that have been drawn into it, may not perhaps see the ground upon which it was undertaken. But the Lord has opened an eye in many, which sees the rise and ground, entrance and end, of this libertine spirit and its work. And this eye will the Lord daily open more and more, in all that diligently and in sincerity wait upon him.

Therefore all friends every where, who have not yet a clear sight, and a thorough understanding of the nature and work, design and drift of this dividing spirit, wait I beseech you, in simplicity of heart and lowliness of mind, upon the Lord, and keep to the measure of the grace you have received from him; and allow not your minds to be swayed or biassed by any personal kindness, natural affection, relation, kindred, or acquaintance, but stand single and open to the Lord, not joining to, nor any way countenancing that which the testimony of Truth, in the arisings of the heavenly life, and breakings forth of the divine power through any, goes forth against.

So will your present standing be safe, and you be preserved out of the snares of this insinuating

and treacherous spirit: and the Lord, in his appointed time, as you abide with him, will open your understandings further, and give you a clearer sight of that which at present you do not fully see, and thereby bring you to that certainty and assurance, which blessed be his name, he has brought many unto.

And you, my dear friends, whose spirits the Lord has stirred up, and whose hearts he has engaged in a holy zeal, to stand up for his blessed Name and Truth, and to bear a faithful testimony against this wicked rending spirit, go on in the strength and power of the Lord, in the might of the God of Jacob; for you are assuredly on the Lord's side, and the Lord Jehovah, the strength of Israel, is on your side. Therefore, friends, be encouraged in the Lord, to stand steadfast in your testimony, not giving way to the enemy, no, not for a moment. And take heed, I beseech you, in the love of God, how you enter into any treaty of peace or terms of agreement with this ungodly, treacherous spirit, which is out of the truth, and draws out of the truth, and fights against the truth; for there is no peace unto it, says my God.

And they who have joined themselves unto it, and have wickedly given themselves up to be acted by it, and to act for it, must pass through the river of judgment, if ever they be redeemed from under its power. Friends, condemnation must first be felt and owned, before reconciliation can be known; and the fire of the Lord must pass upon the transgressor, to consume the works of darkness, the ungodly deeds, the envious, reviling speeches, the wicked, malicious, slanderous books and pamphlets, etc., and to burn up the ground from which they sprang. For a flaming sword has the Lord God set in his Eden, which turns every way; and none that are gone out can ever come in again, but they must pass under the flaming edge thereof. Therefore, my dear friends, stand your ground in the authority of the heavenly life, and tamper not with God's enemies. Remember the word of the Lord to the prophet: 'Let them return unto you, but you shall not return unto them.' And then what follows? 'I will make you unto this people a fenced brazen wall, and they shall fight against you, but they shall not prevail against you; for I am with you to save you, and to deliver you, says the Lord.' "So the God of life fill your hearts daily more and more with a Phineas' zeal for the honour of his name, and furnish you abundantly with wisdom and counsel, with boldness and courage, with strength and power, to encounter and overcome the enemy; and make every one more watchful against the spirit of the world, to withstand it in all its allurements to vanity, of whatsoever kind; that whatsoever would defile the camp of the Lord, may be purged out, and kept out, that the Lord may more and more delight in his people, and shower down his blessings upon them; which is the fervent desire of your faithful friend in the love and service of the unchangeable truth,

Thomas Ellwood

The 24th of the Second month, 1686.

About the same time, Thomas Ellwood was occupied in transcribing and preparing for the press, the Journal of George Fox, who died in the 11th month, 1690. To this he also prefixed a brief, but compre-

hensive review of the character of his excellent and lamented friend; the insertion of which will probably not be unacceptable to the reader.

*THOMAS ELLWOOD'S ACCOUNT
OF THAT EMINENT AND HONOURABLE SERVANT OF THE LORD, GEORGE FOX.*

This holy man was raised up by God, in an extraordinary manner, for an extraordinary work, even to awaken the sleeping world, by proclaiming the mighty day of the Lord to the nations, and publishing again the everlasting Gospel to the inhabitants of the earth, after the long and dismal night of apostasy and darkness. For this work the Lord began to prepare him, by many and various trials and exercises from his very childhood: and having fitted and furnished him for it, he called him into it very young; and made him instrumental, by the effectual working of the Holy Ghost, through his ministry to call many others into the same work, and to turn many thousands from darkness to the light of Christ, and from the power of Satan unto God.

I knew him not until the year 1660; from that time to the time of his death I knew him well, conversed with him often, observed him much, loved him dearly, and honoured him truly; and upon good experience can say, he was indeed a heavenly-minded man, zealous for the name of the Lord, and preferred the honour of God before all things.

He was valiant for the Truth, bold in asserting it, patient in suffering for it, unwearied in labouring in it, steady in his testimony to it, immoveable as a rock. Deep he was in divine knowledge, clear in opening heavenly mysteries, plain and powerful in preaching, fervent in prayer. He was richly endued with heavenly wisdom, quick in discerning, sound in judgment, able and ready in giving, discreet in keeping, counsel; a lover of righteousness, an encourager of virtue, justice, temperance, meekness, purity, chastity, modesty, humility, charity, and self-denial in all, both by word and example. Graceful he was in countenance, manly in personage, grave in gesture, courteous in conduct, weighty in communication, instructive in discourse, free from affectation in speech or carriage. A severe reprove of hard and obstinate sinners, a mild and gentle admonisher of such as were tender, and sensible of their failings. Not apt to resent personal wrongs; easy to forgive injuries; but zealously earnest where the honour of God, the prosperity of truth and the peace of the church, were concerned. Very tender, compassionate, and pitiful he was to all that were under any sort of affliction; full of brotherly love, full of fatherly care: for indeed the care of the churches of Christ was daily upon him, the prosperity and peace whereof he studiously sought.

Beloved he was of God; beloved of God's people; and, which was not the least part of his honour, the common butt of all apostates' envy; whose good, notwithstanding, he earnestly sought.

He lived to see the desire of his soul, the spreading of that blessed principle of divine light,

through many of the European nations, and not a few of the American islands and provinces, and the gathering of many thousands into an establishment therein: of which the Lord vouchsafed him the honour to be the first effectual publisher, in this latter age of the world. And having fought a good fight, finished his course, and kept the faith, his righteous soul, freed from the earthly tabernacle, in which he had led an exemplary life of holiness, was translated into those heavenly mansions, where Christ our Lord went to prepare a place for his own; there to possess that glorious crown of righteousness which is laid up for, and shall be given by the Lord, the righteous Judge, to all them that love his appearance. Ages to come, and people yet unborn, shall call him blessed; and bless the Lord for raising him up: and blessed shall we also be, if we so walk as we had him for an example; for whom this testimony lives in my heart, he lived and died the servant of the Lord.

Thomas Ellwood

In the year 1694, Thomas Ellwood engaged in controversy with George Keith; whose separation from his friends, and renunciation of those principles, of which, during a period of about thirty years, he had been a public and zealous advocate, became a source of much and painful dissension in the Society, as well as of heartfelt sorrow to those with whom he had, at one time, appeared to be cordially united in Christian fellowship.

George Keith was educated in the Presbyterian church, was a man of talent and learning, and had obtained the degree of Master of Arts in the university of Aberdeen, the place of his nativity.

The first mention we find of him, after he became a member and minister of the Society of Friends, is in Sewel's account of the dispute to which Thomas Ellwood alludes in his journal, held in London in the year 1674, between some Baptists and Friends, and in which the cause of the latter was supported by George Whitehead, Stephen Crisp, William Penn, and George Keith. In the succeeding year, he united with Robert Barclay in a similar engagement with some scholars of the university of Aberdeen; on which occasion four of the students were induced to embrace Friends' principles.

In 1677, George Keith united with George Fox, William Penn, Robert Barclay, and other Friends, in their religious labours in Holland and Germany; and, some years afterwards, he became one of the earliest settlers in Pennsylvania.

After residing there about ten years, he was the means of aggravating, by a religious schism, the political differences which then agitated that infant settlement. Ambitious of rising to greater influence and importance in the Society, and obtaining a superiority over his brethren,—and having imbibed notions subversive of social order, they led him to conduct himself with great disrespect towards the civil authorities in the state, and rendered him dissatisfied with the restraint which the excellent discipline established in the Society imposes upon its members.

He then opposed and ridiculed some of the doctrines and practices of the Society; and, having formed a

separate congregation, distinguished himself and his adherents by the denomination of “Christian Quakers.” He asserted, however, that his dissatisfaction was not with the body of Friends generally, but only with some “unsound members” in Pennsylvania; and accordingly he returned, in 1694, for the purpose of pleading his cause before the yearly meeting in London. After the meeting had concluded its routine of business, adjournments were continued for several days, in which a full opportunity was afforded to Keith and his party, of stating their grievances, and the utmost endeavours were used to effect a reconciliation between him and his friends. But so little disposition did he evince toward such a step, that the means employed to close the breach tended only to widen it, and were followed by his total separation from the Society.

Thomas Ellwood, anxious to counteract the calamitous effects of a disposition to break the bonds of union, and cast off the restraints of social order, wrote:

“An epistle to Friends, briefly commemorating the gracious dealings of the Lord with them, and warning them to beware of that spirit of contention and division which has appeared of late in George Keith.”

The following is an extract from his introductory observations.

Dear friends,

Whom the Lord has called with a holy calling, and who, through faithfulness to the heavenly call, are become the chosen of the Lord. It is in my heart, in the openings of the love of God, to send these few lines among you, as a salutation of true and hearty love unto you; and in the tendering sense of the Lord's unspeakable goodness unto us, which at this time rests with an affecting weight upon my spirit, briefly to commemorate the gracious dealings of the Lord with us since we have been a people.

Great and manifold have been the mercies of our God unto his people, in this his day; and his loving-kindnesses are beyond expressing: when we were young and little, his fatherly care was over us; he preserved us and nourished us, and caused us to grow up before him. How did he carry his lambs in his bosom, when the beasts of prey roared on every side, seeking to devour! Who can rehearse the many deliverances He has wrought for his people, in their passage from spiritual Egypt! How has he girded their loins with strength, and covered their heads in the day of battle! How has he subdued their enemies before them, and put to flight the armies of aliens! How has he fed them with bread from heaven, and made them to suck honey out of the rock! Yes, he has caused the rock to give forth water abundantly, and has been to his people as a brook in the way and the shadow of a mighty rock in a weary land. So that from a sensible experience we can say, to his praise, our bread has been sure, and our water has not failed, as we have singly relied on him.

O! his goodness is unutterable, and his faithfulness has never failed them that trust in him.

When have we ever been in prison for his sake, and He has not visited and comforted us there? What sufferings have any undergone on his account, and he has not abundantly recompensed the loss? No, has he not often stopped the mouths of lions, and reprov'd rulers for the sake of his people, saying, 'touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm.' In all our exercises he has been with us, and he has stood by us in our sorest trials; yes, he has caused his angel to encamp round about us, so that no weapon formed against us has prospered; but every tongue that has risen up against us, the Lord has given us power to condemn: blessed be his holy name; and exalted and magnified be his glorious power for ever!

These things, and much more than I can write, I doubt not but you, my dear friends, are witnesses of; you especially, my elder brethren, who were called early in the morning of this day, and have stood faithful in your testimony until now, who from your own both early and late experiences can set your seals to the truth hereof; and unto you I do believe this brief commemoration of the goodness and loving-kindness of the Lord to his people, will be pleasing and delightful, as I hope it may prove useful and profitable unto us all, in the stirring up of the pure mind, and putting us in fresh remembrance of the Lord's manifold favours towards us, and gracious dealings with us; which should be as a renewed engagement upon us to cleave fast unto the Lord, and, in humility of heart, to walk closely with him, both that we may, as far as in us lies, answer his great loving-kindness to us-ward, and receive from him daily strength and ability to stand, and withstand the assaults and temptations of the enemy, and escape his snares, wherewith he is, at this time, as busy and industrious to betray, and draw aside from the simplicity of the truth, as ever he was.

For, friends, you know we have a restless adversary to watch against, and to war with; one that sometimes walks about as a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour; and sometimes creeps about as a subtle serpent, seeking whom he may betray; whom in each appearance, it is our duty and interest to resist, steadfast in the faith which overcomes. I need not recount unto you, my friends, the many winds and floods, storms and tempests, of open and cruel persecutions, which this roaring adversary has often raised, and caused to beat upon us, to have driven us, if possible, from off our foundation; you cannot have forgotten it, nor that noble arm of the Lord, which was made bare for our preservation; and, by preserving us against the most furious shocks, gave evidence even to the world, that we are that people whose house is founded and built upon that immovable rock, Christ Jesus.

At this sort of fighting the enemy has been foiled; which has made him shift his hand, and, like a cunning hunter, spread his nets, set his snares, lay his baits, to catch the simple and unwary ones. Thus wrought this subtle enemy in the early times of Christianity, sometimes stirring up the rulers, both Jews and Gentiles, to fall with violent and bloody hands upon the little flock of Christ and sometimes, in the intermissions of those storms, covering his hooks with the tempting baits of pleasure, profit and preferment, he caught some, perhaps of those that had withstood the strongest storm of outward persecution, and made them instruments for himself

to work by to betray others. Such was Diotrephes of old, whose aspiring mind, loving and seeking pre-eminence, laboured to make a schism in the church, prating against even the elders thereof with malicious words, etc. What mischief the wicked one has wrought in our day by such ambitious spirits, I need not recount, nor is it pleasing to me to remember: you know it, to your grief, as well as I.

But this in all such cases is observable, that such as have made disturbances in the church, and have run into divisions and separations from friends, have framed to themselves some specious pretence or other, as the inducement to their undertaking, which they have industriously spread abroad, and varnished over with the fairest colours they could, to allure and draw others to join with them.

This publication excited the resentment of George Keith, who, after having in vain demanded its suppression by the Society, opposed it with what he styled "A Loving Epistle;" in which he charged the author with fifty perversions; and in a short time after he brought forward what he called proofs of those perversions, and at the same time expressed his unalterable attachment to the Society. This was speedily followed by a reply from Thomas Ellwood, entitled "A further discovery of that spirit of contention and division, which has appeared of late in George Keith, etc., wherein his charges are answered, his falsehood is laid open, and the guilt and blame of the breach and separation in America, etc., are fixed faster on him; written by way of epistle, and recommended as a further warning to Friends."

Before taking leave of George Keith, we may remark, that his congregation at Turner's hall, and his reputation among other dissenters, gradually declined, on their perceiving a change in his religious tenets, which soon approximated those of the church of England. And after having, as we have seen, relinquished the Presbyterian habiliments, and successively assumed the garb of Quakerism, and other modes of dissent, his last transformation exhibits him in the sacerdotal robes of Episcopal Orthodoxy; in which character he performed, in 1702, an unsuccessful mission to the western hemisphere, with the design of restoring other dissenters to the bosom of the "Mother Church."

We find no mention of Thomas Ellwood for some years after his controversy with Keith, except that in the course of the years 1701 and 1702, he entered into a correspondence with John Shockling, a clergyman in Kent, on the subject of Baptism, which was not presented to the public.

This period of relaxation from other engagements, facilitated his completion of a connected view of Scripture history, digested, as far as he possessed the means of ascertaining it, in chronological order. The first part appeared in 1705, under the title of "Sacred History, or the historical parts of the Holy Scriptures of the Old Testament, gathered out from the other parts thereof, and digested, as near as well could be, into due method with respect to order of time and place: with some observations here and there, tending to illustrate some passages therein." The second part, comprising the history of the New Testament, followed in 1709. This is a work of considerable merit, and has been favourably received by the Society, as is evinced by the sale of four editions, and the publication of a fifth, which is still extant,

in three duodecimo volumes.

In 1707 Thomas Ellwood closed his controversial labours, by a work designed to evince the spirituality of the Christian dispensation, and its abrogation of types and ceremonies. In the year 1710, he was engaged in preparing for the press, an account of Oliver Sansom, of Abingdon, Berkshire, committed to him during the life of the author, and to which he prefixed a pertinent testimony respecting him.

The year following, he ushered into the world the last, but not least, effort of his muse, entitled —“Davideis: the life of David, king of Israel—A sacred poem, in five books;” to the composition of which he had occasionally devoted some leisure hours, for a considerable number of years, without any view to publication.

In a postscript to his “Supplement,” Joseph Wyeth says: “I have understood that our friend T. Ellwood, after he had finished and published 'Davideis,' signified that he had but one thing more which lay upon his mind, and that was, to add something to his journal; which was chiefly to give an account of his books and writings.” His accomplishment of this desire was probably prevented by the debilitated state of his bodily powers, in consequence of an asthmatic disorder, to which he was subject during the last few years of his life: previously to this affection he appears to have enjoyed, with but little interruption, that uniform state of good health, which is the usual attendant of a vigorous constitution, preserved by moderation and temperance.

On the 23rd of second month, 1713, he was attacked by a paralytic seizure, which he survived only about a week. During this time he frequently expressed his love to his friends, and the pleasure he derived from their company—his desire for the welfare of the Society, and especially for that portion of it with which he had been more immediately connected — and the resignation, peace, and joy, which attended his mind in the prospect of a speedy transition to a never ending state of being.

This took place on the 1st of third month, 1713, in the seventy-fourth year of his age.

His remains were interred at Jordan's burying ground, where they were attended by a large company of his fellow professors, and many of other persuasions, by whom he appears to have been held in much esteem. He had suffered the loss of his wife, who occupied the station of a minister, about five years previous to his decease. They do not appear to have had any offspring. Their residence was at Hunger Hill, near Amersham, where he seems to have led a life of retirement, unencumbered with much, if any, commercial engagement.

Thomas Ellwood's station in the church was that of an elder; though he did sometimes “appear as a minister.” “In those meetings set apart for the affairs of Truth,” one of his contemporaries remarks, “he often appeared in great wisdom, having an extraordinary talent given of the Lord for that work, more than many other brethren; and faithful he was in watching for instruction from God, to improve the same to his glory and the church's advantage.” The loss of his valuable services in the exercise of Christian discipline, was deeply felt by his friends, as is Richard Vivers' Testimony concerning T.

Ellwood, evinced by the testimonies to his worth, prefixed to his journal. Joseph Wyeth, in describing his character, says: "He was a man of a comely aspect, of a free and generous disposition, of a courteous and affable temper, and pleasant conversation; a gentleman, a scholar, a true Christian, an eminent author, a good neighbour, and kind friend.'

George Bowles' Testimony Concerning Thomas Ellwood.

Dear Friends, It is in my heart on this occasion, briefly to commemorate the tender dealings of the Lord with his people in this latter age of the world, when it has pleased him, in love to poor lost man, graciously to appear, by the breaking forth of his glorious gospel-day. And by the secret divine reaches of the hand of God, which have been felt and seen in the light of it, many have been drawn in their spirits to seek after the Lord, and to inquire after the knowledge of the way of life and salvation. Blessed be his holy name, who was graciously pleased, by the in-shinings of this divine light in the hearts of many, to expel the darkness and rend the veil. Then was the arm of his mighty power made bare, for the gathering many thousands to the saving knowledge of himself. In that day was the Lord pleased, according to his promise, to pour forth of his Spirit upon sons and upon daughters; yes, upon servants and upon handmaids, and many were made to prophesy. These being qualified by the Holy Spirit, which they received, and were baptized by it into his name, became willing, and were freely given up in obedience to the Lord, and in bowels of tender love to the souls of mankind, in his power to preach the gospel of life and salvation to those to whom they were sent, and many were turned from darkness to light, and from the power of satan unto God, by their ministry.

Amongst these, our dear deceased friend and brother, Thomas Ellwood, was one whose conscience was reached and awakened by the powerful ministry of dear Edward Burrough. Of that day and time, and the worthy instrument by whose ministry he was convinced and turned unto God, and made sensible of the divine principle of life and light in his own heart, I have heard him speak with great regard; and also relate the sufferings which attended him after he received the truth, in his father's family, for the truth's sake; and how the Lord preserved him in that time, under the various exercises which he passed through for truth's testimony. This, for Christ's sake, he was conscientiously concerned to stand in, according to that plainness and simplicity which truth then led, and still continues to lead, the sincere disciples of Christ into, by which they were distinguished from the world; and for the sake thereof, were despised of men and hated of the world. Such was the plain language of thou to one, and refusing the hat honour; for which, dear Thomas Ellwood suffered not a little in that day, as by the following account of his life, more fully appears. It were well, if all who come up in a profession of the blessed truth in this time, were faithful in these, and in the other branches of its testimony. Let all consider, that the neglecting thereof, is in degree, strengthening the hands of evil doers, and making void the sufferings of the faithful, who for the sake of their testimony, loved not their lives to the death; but underwent cruel mockings, buffetings, stonings, whippings, stockings, revilings, imprisonments, and spoiling of goods; rejoicing in the Lord, that they were counted worthy to suffer for his name-sake. In this respect,

my dear friend was a good example, he being a man of a steady mind, and very patient in suffering, as well as faithful in his testimony for truth, and took joyfully the spoiling of his goods, wherein he was tried but a few years before his death. He was often engaged in defence of truth's testimony, both against professed adversaries, and also against the libertine spirit which appeared in some, professing the same truth with us, who opposed themselves against that good order and discipline which the truth led Friends into. This will abundantly appear from the books themselves, which are in print, written upon various occasions and several subjects; and let not his great labour and industry be forgotten, in writing those two historical volumes relating to the Old and New Testament: a work truly great, and may be of great use and service. By his many labours, it may be perceived that the Lord had endowed him with an excellent gift, and qualified him for the service of truth, his church and people; which he employed to the honour of the great Giver, and to the comfort and edification of the church of Christ.

But more especially were his services known to the brethren in this county of Bucks; most of whom are fallen asleep, and but few remaining, who knew him in his beginning, or his first services for the Lord, his church and people; amongst whom he was a zealous assertor of that excellent discipline the Lord had opened and led his people into, for preserving his church as a garden enclosed. For this cause, many of those libertines set themselves fiercely against him, and shot their arrows at him; but the Lord defended him, and covered his head in the day of battle, and his bow abode in strength, and his bough spread over the wall, and continued fresh and green: but a blast from the Lord came upon their evil work; and how have they melted away? How is their strength failed, and their work brought to naught? But the blessing of the Lord is with his people, even with the faithful, to this day, whom he has preserved as a peculiar treasure to himself: blessed be his holy name forevermore.

It may be truly said of this dear friend, that as the Lord fitted him for his service, so was he eminently serviceable in his hand, in the church of Christ; of which there are many living witnesses in this and the adjacent counties. The sense of which touches me and others with the deeper sense of the great loss the church has by his removal. But being also sensible through the Lord's goodness, that our loss is his eternal gain, I feel in my heart a humble submission to the will of Him, who does whatsoever pleases him, both in heaven and in earth: and who shall say unto Him, What are you doing? It is the tender breathing of my spirit to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, that he would be graciously pleased, in pity and compassion to his people, to raise up, fit and furnish more faithful servants for his work and service, and make them zealous for his name and truth upon the earth, that the place of this dear friend, and other faithful servants of the Lord and his people, of late removed from amongst us in these parts, may be supplied; and that the spouse of Christ may, amidst all her tribulations, afflictions and sore exercises, be made to praise the Lord, and bless his holy name, who takes away one, and raises up another, and blesses his children with his goodness, according to his promise made of old, by the holy prophet, saying, "I will pour my Spirit upon your seed, and my blessing upon your offspring." Thus has the Lord preserved Zion from age to age: and I doubt not, but am fully persuaded, that he will still bless his people and preserve Zion, and deliver her from all her enemies.

And my dear friends, brethren and sisters, although it be matter of sorrow to us to part with our dear

friends, especially such as have faithfully served the Lord and his people in their generation, as it may, I hope without just occasion of offence to any, be said of dear Thomas Ellwood; yet may we not sorrow unseasonably, as those who sorrow without hope, but believing that the Lord has taken him to himself in mercy, let us all learn resignation to his blessed will, and say with holy Job, “The Lord gives, and the Lord takes away: blessed be the name of the Lord.” I may farther signify unto you, that it being my lot to be with this dear friend almost every day of his last illness, I did observe in him, to my great comfort and satisfaction, a quiet composed frame of mind and spirit, and resignation to the will of God. When I came first to him, which was soon after I heard of his being taken ill, on the 24th of the second month, I found him very much disabled by the distemper, which was thought to be a palsy, that had seized him, especially on his right side, so that he could not stand alone, nor help himself, but a little with his left hand; and his speech was also very much interrupted, insomuch that it was with great difficulty, for the most part, that he expressed himself so as to be understood. Some time after I came to him, there being also other friends with him, we sat down together under a weighty exercise of spirit, waiting upon the Lord in deep silence, with our eye to him; it pleased the Lord eminently to appear amongst us, and to fill our hearts with the refreshing streams of his divine love, and to open the mouth of one of us in prayer and supplication. The Lord was graciously pleased abundantly to replenish our spirits, to our mutual comfort, in a living sense of divine goodness; and this our dear friend, expressed himself in great tenderness and brokenness of spirit, in this way, “I am sensibly comforted and refreshed in this visit.” And that afternoon, fixing his eyes upon me, with great earnestness of spirit he expressed, as well as he could at that time, a great concern that was upon his mind for Truth, and the friends of it, in several particulars; especially, in relation to our own monthly and quarterly meetings, the writings of both which, had been under his care for more than forty years. After this, he was much eased in his spirit, and so continued to the last, so far as I perceived; often saying, when asked how he did? 'I am easy, I am quiet.' And he was often very tender in his spirit, expressing his resignation to the will of God, whether in life or death, saying, 'If the Lord has no more work for me to do, I am content and resigned to his will; and my hearty farewell to all my brethren.' And at another time, nearer his end, he said to us present, in much brokenness of heart, 'I am full of joy and peace—my spirit is filled with joy;' or to this effect. His speech was so weakened, that several things which he spake at times, in a tender sense of the Lord's goodness, could not well be collected; the sense of which deeply affected some of us who were with him.

My heart is sorrowfully affected at this time, in a sense of the great loss which the church of Christ has by his removal: but in this I am comforted, in a living sense of the Lord's mercy and goodness towards him, in carrying him through his affliction in great patience and quietness; under which he was sweetly refreshed by the streams of divine love, and his cup was often made to overflow. We, who were present, being touched with a sense thereof, were comforted; being in a travail of spirit for him, and did in our measures truly sympathize with him under his affliction. And I am fully satisfied he laid down his head in peace with Lord, and is gathered to his everlasting rest. He departed this life the 1st of the third month, 1713, about the second hour in the morning, in the seventy-fourth year of his age. He received the truth in the year 1659, and lived in fellowship with the friends of it about fifty-three years. And I think it may be truly said of him, that as he lived so he died, the servant of the Lord and his people, and

has left a sweet savour behind him, and his memory is blessed with the righteous for ever. Amen.

George Bowles.

Eighth month, 1713.

A Testimony from the monthly meeting at Hunger-hill, the 7th of the Fourth month, 1713, concerning our dear and well-beloved friend and brother in the Truth, Thomas Ellwood, deceased.

That the dead who die in the Lord, are blessed of him, we have great assurance, from John the divine in his writing to the seven churches; Rev. xiv. 13. Where he tells them, that he heard a voice from heaven, saying, write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth: yes, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them. Of which number, we have no cause to doubt but this our dear friend is one; who was eminently serviceable in the church of Christ. He was a man to whom the Lord had given a large capacity beyond many, and furnished him with an excellent gift; whereby he was qualified for those services in the church, in the performance of which he did shine as a star, which received its lustre and brightness from the glorious Sun of Righteousness. He was wise, but humble; condescending to the weak, and ready to help where he saw and felt sincerity; but sharp to that which he apprehended to be insincere and deceitful; for which cause, he was not acceptable to hypocrites and disorderly walkers. He was a man of a very acceptable and agreeable conduct, as well as sober and religious, both in the church and in the world, being of a free and affable temper and disposition, far from affectation; but of a courteous behaviour and graceful carriage to all, and very serviceable to and amongst his neighbours: he was very near and dear to many of us, who were most ultimately acquainted with him, and his memorial is sweet to us.

His services in our meetings, and in the quarterly meeting for the county of Bucks, were very great, and of many years continuance; in which he showed great diligence, being of a ready mind, willing to serve the church, according to that ability which the Lord had given him; and his heart and house were open to his friends, and the monthly meeting was kept there more than forty years, and remains there to this day. Our loss is great by his removal: but in this we are satisfied, that it is his everlasting gain; being gathered, as we have good cause to believe, to his eternal rest. The knowledge we had of him, and the good account which we have received of him, in the time of his last illness, by those who were most constantly with him, and of his quiet and peaceable departure, do sensibly engage our hearts to acquiesce in the will of the Lord; and therein we have peace and comfort. He departed this life, the 1st of the third month 1713, and was honourably buried in Friends' burying-place at New Jordans, in the parish of Giles-Chalfont, in the county of Bucks, the 4th day of the same month.

Signed by appointment of the monthly meeting by us, George Bowles, Wm. Grimsdall, James Smith, Daniel Wharley, Daniel Roberts, Abraham Barber, Thomas Olliffe.

A Testimony from the Women's meeting concerning Thomas Ellwood.

A concern is upon our spirits to write somewhat concerning our dear deceased friend and elder, Thomas Ellwood, who was highly valued by us, for that wisdom and counsel which were with him. He being of a free and affable temper, ready to assist those who stood in need thereof, encouraged many to apply to him for advice, under the many circumstances and various exercises which this uncertain world affords; which we have found to be for our good, as we followed it. He was an early comer to meetings, seldom hindered by weather, though he lived three miles distant, when bodily weakness did not prevent, being oft of late years, indisposed as to his health. The monthly meeting was held at his house about forty years, and he always looked very kind and courteous on Friends when they came there, and took care and notice of the lowest, who came in sincerity. He was zealous for good order, and against such, who, being in an apostatized spirit, opposed it; and may well be numbered amongst the worthies, whose names are upon record for their valour. He never turned his back on such who opposed the truth; but stood his ground, as his printed sheets on such occasions do show. His other works manifest how great endowments God, who not only gives wisdom, but teaches humility, had bestowed upon him; yet we who knew him in his conduct, are engaged to set forth how kind and condescending he was to the weakest capacity. Many generations to come may learn how good it is to forsake all and follow Christ Jesus, as this our friend did, as the account of his life shows.

He was greatly respected by his neighbours, for his services amongst them; his heart and doors were open to the poor, both sick and lame, who needed help, and had it freely; taking care to provide things useful for such occasions, often saying, he mattered not what cost he was at to do good. Such lament their loss: what then may we do, who miss him in a higher station, in his great service in the church of Christ, but desire to be resigned to the will of the Lord; who preserved him through all his hardships, to a dominion over false brethren, and is now out of their reach, and of temptation too; on whose head the blessing, asked for Joseph, rests. As a fruitful bough his branch spread over the wall of opposition, and his bow abode in strength; the hands of his arms being made strong by the help of the mighty God of Jacob, to whom be the glory for what he has wrought in our day, whose own works praise him for evermore. Let the tears of sorrow that we shed, for the loss of this our deceased friend, be remembered, and let each of us bow our spirits, in a godly care, that we may come up according to our several capacities, to follow the Lord faithfully, in godly zeal for his honour; and so come to lay down our heads in joy and peace, as this our friend expressed that he did.

This eminent servant of Christ, was early convinced of the way of Truth, wherein he continued to the finishing of his day; for the sake of which, he soon became a sufferer; not only by imprisonment, for worshipping God in the assemblies of his people, but also, from his father, by whom he was made as an outcast, for no other cause, but for his faithful testimony in taking up the cross to the world's behaviour and language. Whereupon he was invited by his much valued friend Isaac Penington, to his house, where he abode several years, until he married. He was a blessing in, as well as a great comfort and help to that family; and by his wise conduct, gained much esteem, not only from the elders but the youth, whom he instructed in learning; and though most of them are by death removed, yet one still

remains, who from certain and experimental knowledge can commemorate his worth; being engaged thereto, from a sense of the benefit of his good and wholesome advice. Which friendship continued firm to the last.

His natural capacity was large, and his understanding in the things of God, very deep; which excellent qualifications meeting in one, rendered him useful beyond many to his country, as well as very serviceable in the church; by both which he is, and will be greatly missed. But he has gone to his grave in a full age, and gathered as a shock of corn in its season, having done his day's work faithfully: so that saying may be verified in him, 'The end crowns all.' His sickness was sudden, which soon deprived him of the use of his limbs; yet he retained his inward and outward senses clear; and notwithstanding at times his pains were great, his exemplary patience and composed resignation were remarkably apparent to those that visited and attended him; so that their sorrow in parting with so dear a friend, was intermixed with comfort in beholding the heavenly frame of mind wherewith he was adorned.

Thus after all his labours, he entered into everlasting rest, and left many behind weeping, though not without hope, that they shall again meet at the general assembly of saints, where the redeemed shall sing praises to their blessed Redeemer, whose right it is to reign for ever.

We have this farther to add, namely, that our esteem of him was great, because of that real worth that was in him, through the operation of the mighty power of the Lord that separated him from the love of the world: so that he chose, with Moses, rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season. It pleased the Lord to fit him with wisdom and counsel, so that he was made able to give judgment in difficult cases, wherein many of us particularly received benefit, and therefore have cause to lament the loss we have by his removal. And oh! say our souls, that the Lord would raise up many more in his room, to the praise and honour of the good Husbandman. And it is our desire that we, who are yet behind, may be made able so to steer our course through this troublesome world, that when our end comes, we may lay down our heads in peace with the Lord, and leave a good savour behind us, as this our friend has done.

This is written in true love and respect to the memory of our deceased friend, as it pleased the Lord to move upon our hearts. And being read and approved in our women's meeting at Hunger-hill, the 4th of the eleventh month 1713, was subscribed in behalf of the said meeting by us,

Mary Baker, Mary Wharley, Mary Larcum.

Richard Vivers' Testimony concerning Thomas Ellwood.

He was a man of great wisdom and understanding, and the Lord, the giver of it, being pleased to visit him in his early days, made choice of him, and by the sanctification of his Holy Spirit, fitted and prepared him for his work and service, whereunto he was called. Although he did not often appear as a minister, yet in those meetings set apart for the affairs of Truth, he often appeared in great wisdom,

having an extraordinary talent given of the Lord for that work, more than many other brethren. He was faithful in waiting for instruction from God, to improve the same to his glory, and the church's advantage; for nothing was more desirable to him, than to be employed in the Lord's service: so it pleased the Almighty to furnish him with understanding and strength, faithfully to do his day's work. And now he has taken him to himself, where his soul is at rest; and although our loss be his gain, therein I with many more are greatly comforted, for I can truly say, I loved him in the Truth, from the first of my acquaintance with him, and so it remained to the end of his course, being nearly forty years since we knew each other. Whenever we conversed together, our discourse was chiefly concerning heavenly things, and the affairs of the church. I always thought my time well spent with him, although opportunity would not serve for so much of it as I desired, had it been the will of God.

He was a man true to his friend, and deliberate in the choice of his acquaintance, to whom he showed real love and sincerity of heart. He was one of a steady and sound judgment, as to the things of God; often desiring, that those who came amongst us, especially children of believing parents, might not settle down in a form of godliness, without the power, at which door the apostasy entered; but that they might be raised up to walk in that, wherein the saints' fellowship does stand, which is the light of our Lord Jesus Christ, enlightening every man that comes into the world. Then the ancient testimony of Truth will be more and more raised up in their hearts, and they being preserved of the Lord in it, it will be maintained in its several branches, as in former days. Blessed be the name of the Lord, who has a people in these latter ages of the world to whom he has given power to stand for his Truth while on earth, and to be tender of the honour of his name; of the number of whom, this our deceased friend and brother was; who, although dead, yet his memory lives, and will be preserved amongst the righteous in generations yet to come.

Richard Vivers.

Banbury, 30th of Eleventh month, 1714.